



# TO THE READER

**K**INDLY use this book very carefully. If the book is disfigured or marked or written on while in your possession the book will have to be replaced by a new copy or paid for. In case the book be a volume of set of which single volumes are not available the price of the whole set will be realized.

AMARSINGH COLLEGE



**Stacked**

1981

Library

Class No.

832.62

Book No.

G59F

Acc. No.

2078 ✓





~~CAMBRIDGE COLLEGE LIBRARY~~  
~~SRINAGAR~~  
MARLOWE'S

DOCTOR FAUSTUS

AND PART I OF

GOETHE'S FAUST

TRANSLATED BY JOHN ANSTER

WITH AN INTRODUCTION BY

SIR ADOLPHUS WILLIAM WARD, Litt.D.

AND NOTES BY

C. B. WHEELER, M.A.

HUMPHREY MILFORD

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

LONDON NEW YORK TORONTO

MELBOURNE BOMBAY

1915

832. 62

G 59 F.A.W.

Pl. I.

278

acc. no. 2473.

PRINTED IN ENGLAND  
AT THE OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

11.508





MARLOWE'S  
DOCTOR FAUSTUS  
AND PART I OF  
GOETHE'S FAUST

MARLOWE: EDWARD II. Edited by O. W. TANCOCK. Third edition. Paper boards, 2s. ; cloth, 3s.

SELECTIONS. With an introduction by Sir ARTHUR QUILLER-COUCH. (Select English Classics.) Paper, 3d. ; cloth, 4d.

SHAKESPEARE. Edited by G. S. GORDON. As You Like It. Coriolanus. Hamlet. Julius Caesar. Midsummer Night's Dream. Macbeth. Richard II. The Tempest. Twelfth Night. 1s. net each.

SCENES FROM OLD PLAY BOOKS. By P. SIMPSON. 3s. 6d.

GROWTH OF THE ENGLISH DRAMA. By A. WYNNE. 3s. 6d. net.

SIX ELIZABETHAN PLAYS BY CONTEMPORARIES OF SHAKESPEARE. Edited by C. B. WHEELER. (World's Classics.) 1s. net.

PALGRAVE'S GOLDEN TREASURY. With 109 additional poems to the end of the Nineteenth Century. With notes by C. B. WHEELER. 2s. 6d. Separately, the *Notes*, 1s. 6d. net ; the *Text*, 1s. net.

PEACOCK'S SELECTED ENGLISH ESSAYS. With notes by C. B. WHEELER. 2s. 6d. Separately, the *Notes*, 1s. net ; the *Text*, 1s. net.



## INTRODUCTION

THE two famous plays printed side by side in this volume have something in common beyond their title and their theme ; but it may, perhaps, be well at the outset to deprecate the supposition that the later is in any sense founded on the earlier drama. There is, in truth, no reason for concluding that Goethe was acquainted with Marlowe's tragedy either when, in 1790, he first published his own *Faust* as a ' fragment ', or when, in 1808, he gave, still under that designation, the *First Part* of his great work to the world. A trace—but only a trace—has been found of some such acquaintance about ten years later—in 1818, the year in which, as it happens, the first German translation of Marlowe's play was published ; but it was not till 1829, when in his old age he was hard at work upon the completion of the *Second Part* of *Faust*, that, on being questioned as to Marlowe's *Doctor Faustus*, he broke out into generous praise—' how greatly was it all planned ! he had thought of translating it ! he was fully aware that Shakespeare did not stand alone ! ' If we are to speak of Goethe's indebtedness to Marlowe, it must be treated as an indirect, not as a direct, obligation. There is no indication of the existence—except in the imagination of at least one celebrated critic—of any German play before Marlowe's on the subject of *Faust* ; and, while there remains no doubt whatever as to the direct source of Marlowe's tragedy, the history of its influence in Germany is to all intents and purposes plain. Marlowe took nearly all the characters and all the important incidents of his play from the narrative of the German *Faustbuch* (first printed at Frankfort in 1587), wholly or substantially, as may now be held to be established, through the



medium of the English version, the *History of Doctor Faustus* (of which a reprint is known to have been issued in 1592). The only characters of significance in their relation to the plot that appear in Marlowe without having their counterparts are the Good and the Evil Angel—figures familiar to popular belief. Marlowe's tragedy, having in its turn been carried into Germany by the travelling 'English comedians', either actually gave rise to the treatment of the same theme on the German popular stage, or at all events signally influenced that treatment. 'German comedians' are known to have represented a tragedy on the same subject at Basel in 1696; and by the middle of the eighteenth century Doctor Faustus had become associated on the German stage with *Hans Wurst* and *Arlequin*, as we shall see he had with the latter *bon camarade* on the English. It was in this form that, in the words of Lessing, Germany 'fell in love' with the story of *Doctor Faust*, and that till recently it continued to gratify audiences in the neighbourhood of Vienna and in remoter parts of Austria. It also sank (as again in England) into the still humbler sphere of the puppet-play; and it was in one or the other of these popular shapes that the Faust-drama became known to Goethe—probably in his own native Frankfort, where Johann Spiess's *Faustbuch* had first seen the light of day. The opening soliloquy of Marlowe's *Faustus*, which, as Hayward has pointed out, is the only part in which the Elizabethan drama bears any similarity to Goethe's, thus unmistakably descended from the English to the German poet. How entirely independent Goethe's work is of his predecessor's, is best seen in passages where the course of the action brings them into unavoidable contact, but where in the dramatic and poetic treatment a gulf—the gulf of the ages—seems to lie between them. Thus Faustus's contract with the Devil, an act of the deepest significance in the old play, is a mere incident, half ironically treated, in Goethe; while the apparition of Helen, which in Marlowe is hailed by an apostrophe



of incomparable beauty, is in the *First Part* of *Faust* only a trick of bewitchment; nor was it till her re-appearance in the *Second Part* that Helena became a symbol of inspiring perfection.

The two plays must therefore be kept distinct from each other; yet there is, nevertheless, another point of view from which they may legitimately be brought into comparison. Marlowe's *Doctor Faustus* is one of the most characteristic products of the latest—and by far the most interesting—phase of the English Renaissance. Half-freed by the Reformation from a spiritual bondage which had seemed to have become an organic part of the national life, and self-exalted by the sense of achievement waiting on aspiration, which it is the privilege of a great age like the Elizabethan to impart, Marlowe's generation deemed nothing impossible to its efforts, and regarded nothing as sacred against approach, conquest, possession. Very much the same was the spirit of that movement in the intellectual life of young Germany which is commonly known as the period of *Storm and Stress*, and which coincided with the years of Goethe's adolescence and early manhood. In this sodality, as in that of the earlier Elizabethan wits, great thoughts and high ambitions were accounted the current coin of intercourse among the initiated, together with a self-reliance scornful of limits and an audacity unconscious of drawbacks, and a love of nature which exhibited itself as a contempt for aught that restrained in the way of law or form. Both these movements recognized themselves as revivals; for Marlowe and his fellows counted it their chief glory to make it known how deep they had drunk of the Pierian spring; and the young combatants of the *Storm and Stress* made Shakespeare the idol of their literary faith, honouring by his side certain other English writers who would perhaps have thought it strange to find themselves in such—or in one another's—company. And both movements ended more harmoniously than they had begun; for from the earlier there came forth Shakespeare, master



of himself and of his art ; and, as the later calmed down, Goethe, whom hardly one of his associates in it refused to acknowledge as his leader, achieved a purification and refinement of his own powers, and was thus enabled to point the way to a new and nobler humanism.

The actual source of Marlowe's *Tragical History of Doctor Faustus* has been mentioned above ; but the *Faustbuch* itself of course represents only a particular stage in the growth, expansion, and development of the *Faust*-legend. Some of the fibres of that legend stretch back among the traditions and records of the ancient world—to the myth of Prometheus and the *Book of Job* ; and the conception which lies at the very root of it—man's abuse of supernatural powers acquired by him—is only a variant of the belief of his use of such powers in the service of the Deity who bestowed them. Christianity, while vindicating the inner truth of this belief, could not bring itself to condemn the corresponding notion that maleficent demons (into whose place the disestablished pagan divinities readily fitted) continued to supply man with similar powers, though towards unholy ends. The magicians of the earlier Middle Ages were thus popularly regarded as the conscious agents and servants of the Evil One ; and among them the superstition of high as well as low included philosophers, poets, and men of science—physicians in particular, who were frequently Jews or Mohammedans—whose power men could not ignore, though its sources remained inexplicable to them. Thus, in the mental darkness or *chiaroscuro*, from which only the few were able to emerge, traditions of magic and magicians multiplied, and very often took the form of stories of contracts with the Devil, with whose black magic the white magic of the Church carried on a perennial conflict. Such were the legends of Cyprian of Antioch, of Theophilus of Adana, and many others, including among later instances the story of the original Don Juan, of which the beginnings



go back to the middle of the fourteenth century. At times ecclesiastics—even a Pope—are to be found among the magicians of these legends (the Devil habitually disguising himself as a monk in order to carry on the necessary negotiations); but more frequently the heroes of the stories and of their luxuriant outgrowths are astrologers and alchemists of celebrity, and with them the true scientific enquirers, whom popular ignorance and delusion placed in the same class. Such above all was Roger Bacon, the famous Oxford thinker of the thirteenth century, who was so much greater than his times, and with the remembrance of whom and of his like there was mingled a mass of unsifted anecdote about astrologers, alchemists, mechanics, and other men of science of various periods. The tremendous irony of Roger Bacon's fame, which in Marlowe's day was still such as to induce his fellow-playwright Greene to turn the Friar's exploits into a sort of dramatic parody of those of Dr. Faustus, seems to have remained hidden even from a more recent generation of sightseers.

As the Middle Ages drew to a close, this farrago of crude beliefs, wild superstitions, and abject terrors was stirred into fermentation by the daring spirit of the Renaissance, and again rendered thick and slab by an infusion of Reformation principles and prejudices. In Italy, the earliest home of the Renaissance, a new and wholly unprecedented impulse was communicated to it by the study of Greek, of which the beginnings were facilitated by the collapse of the Eastern Empire. One of the consequences of the spread of this study was the revival of ancient philosophical trains of thought which viewed the world as an emanation of the Deity; and these philosophical speculations invested with a new force and significance the old notions of magic, and the practices, including the dangerous excursions in astrology and alchemy, which had been suggested by them. At the same time, the Hebrew Renaissance, a kind of offshoot of the Greek, occupied itself with the cabbalistic or secret books



of later Jewish literature. Conscious of their mastery of a knowledge which they revealed to the vulgar just far enough to make them wonder and stare, the *scholastici vagantes*, or wandering scholars, who constituted themselves the 'travellers' of the new fraternity of learning, found their way into all parts of Europe, into courts, universities, and other haunts of the studious and the curious, of those eager in the pursuit of wealth and of those athirst for pleasure. Such travellers were the renowned physician Theophrastus Paracelsus; the cosmopolitan extension lecturer Giordano Bruno (whose direct influence upon Goethe is, by the way, notable); and Cornelius Agrippa of Nettesheim, the fame of whose world-wide wanderings and of the canine familiar of his later days had spread into England and throughout Europe. He was a native of Cologne; and the whole of the German West was full of the class of men of which he was the exemplar—from Cologne and the neighbouring Low Countries up to Heidelberg and Tübingen, where they found points of contact with the cabbalistic learning of the three-tongued Reuchlin, with the militant humanism of Ulrich von Hutten, and with the polyhistoric curiosity of Abbot Tritheim of Sponheim, who is so intimately associated with the real Faust or Faustus.

The Reformation had by no means put a stop to the current. It had necessarily made a deep breach in the power of the Church to resist and overthrow the Devil and all his works, and his black magic in particular; but, so far as the multitude was concerned, no substitute was furnished by the reasoned faith of the individual. As Luther's own heroic revolt had been followed by a compromise, so the Reformation with which he was identified asserted—not tacitly, but with loud insistence—its maintenance of the belief in the Devil, and in the whole world of magic and sorcery of which he—like Satan enthroned on the Blocksberg in Walpurgis-night—was the central personage. Thus there came to pass the paradoxical result—over which



on earth few wept but the sufferers—that the century of the Reformation and that which ensued were the period in the history of the civilised West when the degrading beliefs in witchcraft and cognate superstitions were there most widely and most firmly held. And nowhere were they more prevalent, and more disastrous in their consequences of persecution and judicial murder, than in Protestant lands—in the England of Queen Elizabeth and King James I, whose national history and literature alike abound in blood-stained pages attesting the strength and pertinacity of this moral epidemic, and in contemporary Germany, where ‘the scholar-errant with the Devil’s bans’ (to quote the title of one of Hans Sachs’s interludes) was so familiar a figure; where, in the latter half of the sixteenth century, religious belief was bound hard and fast by governmental formularies of ‘concord’ which drilled the individual conscience into abject slavery; and where the universities, far from being the homes of intellectual freedom, presented a combination which at Wittenberg Luther himself had lived to deplore—an ugly blend between the presumptuous arrogance of the pedants in the academic chairs and the unbridled licence of a large proportion of their students.

Such—in brief—were some of the elements which entered into the general idea of the German *Faust*-story and were, one and all of them, transferred by Marlowe into his English tragedy. The traces of historical fact in the story, and the questions of the name and personality of its hero, have been the subject of an immense amount of literary and antiquarian research, which cannot be summarised here. The very name of ‘Faust’ or ‘Faustus’ has a long and complicated history. If the ‘Doctor’s’ original surname had the shorter, German, form, it was very possibly ‘Fust’ (though the long-lived notion that the magician Faust and the early painter Fust were identical must be rejected), and was Latinised into a form which was often bestowed as a name on account



of its significance (= *Fortunatus*), and was borne by various personages of note—among them a Faustus said to have been rescued at Antioch for Christianity by St. Peter out of the hands of Simon Magus, and a Manichaean bishop whom St. Augustine worsted in controversy.

The Christian name of Dr. Faustus in the story is invariably 'John' (Johannes)—Goethe only re-christened him 'Henry' because of the domestic associations which the name 'Johann' could not but suggest to a German audience—though a Georgius Sabellicus (who called himself 'Faustus junior') has found his way into some of the records. The historical Doctor (Johannes) Faust can be traced back on satisfactory evidence to 1520, five years before the date recording his visit written on the wall of Auerbach's Cellar in Leipzig, and is mentioned again in 1536, and, though with less certainty of circumstance, at some later dates. In 1562 he is spoken of at length by Melancthon as a native of Kundling (Knittlingen in Württemberg) and a practitioner of magic in both Italy and Germany; and he is stated by this 'first-class' witness to have twice escaped from imprisonment (on one occasion at Wittenberg) by flight, and to have come to his end 'a few years ago' in a village of his native land, 'being found in the morning dead in his bed with his face twisted'—'so the devil had killed him'. The same account mentions Faust's dog, 'who was the Devil'. The man is also referred to in Luther's posthumously published *Table-Talk*. There are several mentions of the same personage in the twenty years following—the last, a circumstantial one, in a work on magic by Augustin Lercheimer, a pupil of Melancthon, in 1585. Thus we are carried to within a few years of the appearance of the *Faustbuch*, into which, indeed, are introduced several anecdotes about magicians related by Lercheimer, and notably his account of the attempted conversion of Faust by an old pious man.

Of the *Faustbuch* itself, either in its German form



or in the English version, nothing further can be said here. Its composite character indicates varied reading on the part of the compiler—chiefly, no doubt, ‘encyclopaedic’, in the sense of second-hand, but coloured by an acquaintance with the Manichaeic notions familiar to the later as well as the earlier Middle Ages, which was perhaps not wholly superficial. The wide popularity of the book is, however, due less to its execution than to its substance, which, as stated above, supplied Marlowe with nearly all the principal incidents and characters of his tragedy. No other source has been discovered as contributory to this. The extant ballad, ‘On the Judgement of God showed upon one John Faustus, Doctor in Divinity’, is possibly identical with that entered on the Stationers’ Registers in February, 1589 (N.S.); but even so it may be concluded to have been founded on the play, rather than vice versa. The supplementary *Wagnerbuch*, which narrates the exploits of Faustus’s *famulus* Wagner (of course a mere expansion of those of the Doctor himself), was not published till 1593, when it seems to have been immediately translated into English. Had Marlowe been able to make use of it, he could hardly have failed to follow the author in carrying his hero into the New World, so enthralling to Elizabethan audiences and readers.

But Marlowe had, as has been seen, matter enough, and stimulus enough, for the construction of the fable of his drama. That his personal experiences had in some measure helped to attract him to its subject, is possible; but we really know very little about them. The son of respectable parents (his father was a small tradesman and ultimately became parish clerk) and educated in a school of good standing under the shadow of Canterbury Cathedral, he had passed on to Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, as a boy full of promise intended, in the regular course of things, to qualify for holy orders. There is nothing to show that he fell under the influence of ‘lewd wags’, such as those in whose company Robert Greene,



according to his own confession, 'consumed the flower of his youth' at Cambridge, a few years before Marlowe's arrival in the University. Still more hazardous would it be to assert that he was impressed by the tendency to free thinking on religious subjects in which one member of his college who left it just before Marlowe came up indulged. He took his B.A. degree—apparently what nowadays would be called a 'good degree'—in the same year (1584) as Thomas Nashe of St. John's; but there is no reason to suppose that at Cambridge he was acquainted with that ingenious personage, with whom he afterwards wrote a play in common. Probably Marlowe remained in residence at Cambridge till 1587, when he graduated as M.A.; but either in that year or earlier he plunged into London life, and became a writer for the stage. It is in this year that he is stated to have translated the *Helenae Raptus* of Coluthus, thus giving proof of the taste for classical poetry which he had nourished at Cambridge. It is rather stretching a point to speak of Marlowe's classical scholarship; even his immortal apostrophe to

||| The face that launched a thousand ships  
And burnt the topless towers of Ilium

—which in part reproduces a passage of his own *Tamburlaine*—might have been suggested to him at second-hand; on the other hand, it was without the affectation of ancient learning which is so tiresome in some contemporary University wits. Neither the intellectual conceit which characterised certain gentlemen students from the Universities who shone upon the London of this period, nor the spirit of lawlessness which pervaded some of them, can fairly be brought home to Christopher Marlowe, who in 1587 found in London a sudden fame, and six years afterwards was there borne to an early grave.

The achievement of *Tamburlaine*, of which the *First Part* was almost certainly produced on the stage in 1587, and of which the *Second Part* followed quickly



on the *First*, was such as to place its author, though he can hardly have been known except as a playwright, in the forefront of those who commanded the attention of the London public. The extraordinary popularity of *Tamburlaine* is attested by the concurrent evidence of parodistic quotation and of imitation by a would-be rival (Greene in *Alphonsus, King of Arragon*), not to speak of the demand for a *Second Part*. Nor was the mark which it made in our literature evanescent; 'it initiated,' says Mr. Churton Collins, 'the history of our romantic drama'; and the solid strength of its versification was symbolical of a general earnestness and vigour of workmanship sufficient at once to elevate the form of poetry of which it was the first great example on our stage. The *Second Part* was worthy of the first; and though the character of Zenocrate, as has been well said, showed that the young poet 'had not yet learned to depict a woman', it was the occasion of some beautiful and impassioned verse. And now, with this sudden triumph, came Marlowe's own time of trial. The great times of which an echo made itself heard in his second play, *Doctor Faustus*, were at their height; and the life of the theatre, like that of the world it mirrored, was being lived at high pressure. And there were few anchorages on the coast of Bohemia. Yet we should be slow in founding conclusions as to Marlowe's ways of life in London on the two isolated incidents of which, apart from the recorded performances of his plays, a record has alone come down to us. In May, 1593, he was summoned before the Privy Council; and in the same month he met with his death at Deptford, in a tavern brawl. The summons may have been due to a quite trivial cause, and his violent death may have been more or less the result of accident. When his contemporaries called to mind how, in the words of the Chorus in *Doctor Faustus*—

Cut was the branch that might have grown full straight  
—they wrote of him as of one whose memory they honoured: so Peele, Nashe, Chapman (who continued



his version of *Hero and Leander*), Drayton, and together with them the most observant and wide-hearted 'shepherd' in all Arcady. That there was no foundation for the charges of atheism and blasphemy brought against him by an embittered controversialist, and unctuously repeated by others, it would be impossible to affirm; but the imputation of 'vices sent from hell' to men of genius (and others) is in itself often the result of thoughtlessness. In any case it would be idle to bring Marlowe's supposed aberrations into any sort of connexion with his second play, which was in all probability completed between four and five years before his death.

The external evidence for the conclusion that *The Tragical History of Doctor Faustus* was first performed some time before February, 1589, and very possibly in 1588, is not absolutely convincing; but it is borne out by the internal evidence of certain historical allusions in the text of the play, and more especially by the character of its versification. In this respect *Doctor Faustus* stands midway between *Tamburlaine* and *Edward II*, neither rigidly adhering to the rule of terminating each line by a single syllable, nor admitting the free use of double-endings characteristic of Marlowe's latest, and maturest, play. The success of *Doctor Faustus* on the stage, where the title-part was acted by Alleyn, can hardly have been inferior to that of *Tamburlaine*, and Greene, as has been seen, again acknowledged it by producing an imitation. That Marlowe's second tragedy holds an enduring place among the great works of the English drama—a description which can hardly be applied to *Tamburlaine*—was not only due to the felicitous choice of a theme almost unique in its human significance and interest. Marlowe's classical training and the enthusiasm for classical mythology and poetry no doubt facilitated his wonderfully rapid acquisition of a mastery over a form which he established as that of English dramatic poetry, and which in his own hands proved itself capable of a further progress towards varied perfection. But he was born



a great poet ; and *Doctor Faustus* contains passages which will only die with our language. The dramatist's tragic power is sufficiently attested by the terror-compelling scenes with which this play closes, and among which the final scene, imitated though it has been (in the first instance by Lodge and Greene in their *Looking Glasse for London and England*), remains in its way unapproached. The characters were rough-hewn and transferred without much nicety of setting from the old story-book ; but their movement—rapid, resolute, and real—gives opportunities for mighty bursts of passion, and even for thrilling touches of pathos.

Of comic power there is no trace in *Faustus*, though it contains plenty of buffoonery. Marlowe was, as a playwright, of course hampered by the conditions of the contemporary theatre. The play may very possibly on its original production have already contained 'additions', consisting no doubt mainly in comic scenes or passages from another hand than Marlowe's ; and that hand may have been Thomas Dekker's—a fellow craftsman not without dramatic genius, and certainly possessed of a strong vein of humour. In September, 1594, more than a year after Marlowe's death, the play was again put on the stage, naturally enough, together with other plays by the same author ; but it was not entered on the Stationers' Registers for printing till 1601, and the date of the earliest extant edition is 1604. Before the last-mentioned date it had certainly undergone considerable revision ; and the edition of 1616 contains further 'additions', which may be in substance ascribed to William Birde and Samuel Rowley ; though of course these passages may in part have been reminiscences of what had been left out in the edition of 1604. Whether or not the earlier set of 'additions' ('earlier' at least in date of publication) made up the whole of the comic scenes then contained in the play, and whether or not they were all Dekker's—there is no proof that Marlowe himself was guilty of any or most of this comic or of other episodic padding. On the other hand, there is no proof that



he was not—there is nothing improbable in the supposition ; and, if most of this stuff is unworthy of Marlowe, so it is of Dekker. The Good and Evil Angel, as has been already pointed out, were not found by Marlowe in the *Faustbuch* ; nor was Cornelius Agrippa ; nor were the Seven Deadly Sins, who are, however, familiar figures in our early literature, and out of whom the famous clown, Tarleton, formed an extemporal play in 1592. The Chorus (the actor who speaks the Prologue and the passages which at various points in the action expedite its progress) was of course added by the dramatist ; and it is the Chorus whose concluding lines supply with so much dignity and depth the comment which to Marlowe and his contemporaries seemed sufficiently to summarize the tremendous moral of his tragedy.

On the English stage, while Greene's *Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay*, as was seen, directly imitated Marlowe's play, and reminiscences of it, or resemblances to it, are traceable in many of our early dramas, the story of Doctor Faustus survived after a fashion during the seventeenth and nearly the whole of the eighteenth century ; but it can scarcely claim to have reappeared during this period in our national literature. The Latin didactic romance, *Nova Solyma, the Ideal City, or Jerusalem Regained* (1648), of which its recent translator made an unsuccessful attempt to prove Milton to have been the author, in one of its episodes, entitled 'The Remarkable Case of Theophrastus', tells the story of an alchemist who entered into a contract with the Evil One. This narrative furnishes the solitary treatment of the theme in modern literature before Goethe's *Faust*, in which the wiles of the Devil are worsted, and the sinner is in the end reconciled with God. The English stage, on the contrary, consistently applied itself to a degradation of the theme. William Mountford's *Life and Death of Doctor Faustus* (produced between 1684 and 1688) is a farce of which part is borrowed from Molière, while the rest is harlequinade. There ensued, besides Powell's puppet-play



of the early seventeenth century, a long series of pantomimes, ending with a *Harlequin Doctor Faustus*, or *the Devil will have his own*, which received the honour of print so late as 1793.

Long before this, as has already been noted, the story of Faust had found its way back in a dramatic form to the country of its origin ; and it was on the popular stage, or very probably in the puppet-theatre, that the subject was first introduced to the notice of the young Goethe and his contemporaries. But it could not have been otherwise than that this subject should be recovered for German literature in an age when that literature was throwing off the shackles of French classicism and, fortified by the example of the English drama in particular, was combining with the pursuit of new ideals a preference for stronger and freer—in a word, romantic—methods. Lessing, the master-spirit of the self-emancipating movement in the world of German culture, drew up two plans of a drama on the subject of Faust, but he left behind him only a single scene—an original variant of the opening adopted by both Marlowe and Goethe. And now there burst into life the strange movement in the intellectual world of Germany which is known in literary history by the name of an indigestible drama by one of the foremost members of the school—if school it can be called—Klinger's *Sturm und Drang*. By this group of writers—nearly all of them young men, with whom however some of their elders sympathetically associated themselves—Goethe, of whose magnetic attractiveness at this stage of his life testimonies abound, was tacitly regarded as their chief ; and, wherever in these years he happened to be residing, he appears in the midst of some of the representatives of the movement. By his own confession, he entered, heart and soul, into the revolutionary ardour which animated his fellows, and into many of the vagaries in which they strove to surpass one another ; and his earlier masterpieces, *Gotz von Berlichingen*, the *Sorrows of Werther*, and *Faust* itself, even in its final



version, exhibit unmistakable traces of the influences which, with the companions of his enthusiasm, he underwent and courted. But the self-control which never wholly deserted him, and the sense of beauty which was part of his being, and which in Italy he only refined, kept him back from a more than occasional lapse into the savage licence of ideas and the grotesque extravagance of form in which it was their common pride to indulge, and by which some, though not all, of them were ultimately submerged. Among the many things which they made it part of their eccentric cult to abhor or despise—including the demands of 'honour' and the less artificial restraints of decorum—were learning and the sciences, together with the professions whose rewards crowned their successful pursuit; literature itself was in their esteem but a tinkling cymbal; one study alone was worth undertaking—that of man; one criterion of truth and loveliness was alone admissible—that of the heart and the human feelings to which it beat in response. Their literary models were writers in whom they recognised, or thought they recognised—the triumph of the direct expression of human character and human emotions over all rules and restraints—the 'divine' Shakespeare above all, who 'breathed his vital spirit into the mummies of his historic heroes'. The subjects of their own works they professed to take by preference direct from life—from the real life that is around them, which they deemed emphatically real in its 'human' problems (often hovering on the confines of incest and bigamy) and in its horrors—horrors in the eyes of the law, in the truer judgement of the human heart explicable and pardonable errors. 'There is no species of crime,' writes one of these students of life, 'of which our century has not one or two specimens to exhibit—regicides are quartered, parricides and fratricides broken on the wheel, infanticide mothers beheaded.' Infanticide in particular was a crime by which the German poets of the age—from Bürger to Schubarth and Schiller—were much exercised; as well as, it must be said, the public conscience generally and



those who were desirous of humanising the operation of a harsh system of penal law. A boundless audacity and an infinite compassion—these were the two motives, neither of them ignoble, which predominated with the combatants of the *Storm and Stress* in the choice and treatment of their literary and especially their dramatic subjects.

*Faust*, then, was in the air as well as on the popular stage and in the puppet-theatre. The hero of the story was manifestly, says one of these writers, a 'big fellow' (*grosser Kerl*), of the Titanic type dear to these 'besiegers of heaven'. With what problems of life and humanity could not such a personage—who feared neither God nor devil, and whom magic could render multiform and ubiquitous—be brought face to face! Among those who dealt with this attractive theme was Friedrich Maximilian von Klinger, already mentioned above, a man to whose strength of will and masculine energy a long and distinguished career bears witness (he was the son of humble Frankfort parents and died as a Russian general, a year before Goethe—1831). Klinger's *Faust's Life, Deeds, and Descent into Hell*,<sup>1</sup> a prose romance in five books, was not published till 1791; but the work, as the author told Goethe in a well-known letter, was a picture of long mental and moral struggles, which, after Goethe's own fashion, he liberated his soul by depicting after he had surmounted them. Klinger identifies Faust with the Mainz printer—a baseless tradition which in England was kept alive by Defoe in his *History of the Devil*, and which is not quite dead yet. In Klinger's story it is Faust who summons his attendant spirit Leviathan to his service from the foot of the throne of Satan, surrounded by his 'princes, potentates, and immortal spirits'. Leviathan presents himself in a red mantle, with 'nothing of a cloven hoof'. Together the pair pass

<sup>1</sup> Translated into English by W. J. Thoms. Klinger afterwards published at 'Bagdad', in 1797, *The Faust of the Orientals* (Ben Hafi's stories of travels before the Deluge).



through the world as a kind of avengers of wickedness, and end their experiences near home in Frankfort and abroad (at the court of Lewis XI, with the Princes in the Tower, and so forth), by strangling that master of sacrilegious crime, Pope Alexander Borgia. Broken-hearted and broken-spirited in spite of his achievements, Faust returns home to find that there his ill-deeds and even his good have borne accursed fruit; the nun Clara, whom he had seduced, murders their child. In vain he is apostrophized by the spirit of the old man his father—his doom is upon him; and he is torn to pieces by exulting fiends. The coincidences between this powerful, though old-fashioned, romance and Goethe's *Faust*, are probably fortuitous, and beyond a doubt unconscious.

Such was not the case with *Die Kindesmörderin* (the Infanticide), a drama by Henrich Leopold Wagner, published in 1776, in which the story of Gretchen is reproduced in its essentials, though transplanted into modern life, and into the atmosphere of prose. There can hardly be any doubt that the indebtedness was at least mainly on the side of Wagner, who was a writer of ability, but of the second class, and given to literary tricks, one of which, in 1775, led to his estrangement from Goethe (he died in 1779). The *Kindesmörderin* borrowed both from Jacob Michael Reinhold Lenz and from Goethe's still unprinted 'fragment' of *Faust*. The general theme of this crude, but in its way impressive, domestic tragedy (to which Schiller's *Cabale und Liebe* seems to owe the character of the old musician Miller) was, as has been said, very much abroad at the time; the sleeping draught was of course taken from *Clarissa Harlowe*, but the song which Evchen sings before the murder of her child must have been modelled on that of Margaret in prison; the fainting in church recurs, as do the names of Martha and Lisel (Lieschen).

Lastly, a very popular writer of the *Storm and Stress* group, Friedrich Müller, commonly called Maler Müller, after, in 1778, he had transferred his activity from letters to painting, composed a *Faust's Leben*, of which



Part I was composed in the year of his departure from Germany. This work is described by Dr. R. Sauer in his very interesting work *Stürmer und Dränger*, to which this Introduction is under great obligations, as a production wherein 'caricatured *diablerie* of the grotesquest sort alternates with the maddest and coarsest scenes filled with students and Jews, the whole being seasoned with literary and personal satire, and not loosely held together by the personality of Faust.' The four further Parts which succeeded the First still remain in MS. ; but a remarkable scene or episode which, under the title of *Situation aus Faust's Leben*, Müller published in 1776, before the appearance of the First Part, gives an insight into the inventive ability and picturesqueness of style that undoubtedly distinguished the author. This fragment shows us Faust interrupted, when at the height of his glory he pays court to the Queen of Arragon, by the appearance of Mephistopheles, who reminds him that half the period of the twenty-four years fixed in the bond between them has just come to an end. The production is dedicated to 'the Spirit of Shakespeare'—a piece of impudence which brought down upon the author the voluble but very gratifying wrath of Wieland. A more sincere flattery is the opening of the 'Situation', in which Satan, Pfertoll (Madhorse) and Moloch meet in a dark cave (in the corresponding scene of Part I of *Faust's Leben* it is a ruined Gothic church), very much like the witches in *Macbeth*.

To Goethe alone in this strange company—in this cager and impatient section of the *Pandæmonium germanicum*, where Lenz figured himself and his friend wandering like the two Athenians among the *Birds*—the theme of Faust became a link which accompanied him through life and developed with every stage of his own development. His heart was in the theme from his passionate student-days at Strassburg to the period of tranquil activity in which, more than threescore years later, his life closed at Weimar. He interwove with it the experiences of life which to him were the



most precious and the most memorable—his love for Friderike and his desertion of the lovely girl, whose sweet intelligent *naïveté* charms us from the lips of Margaret, to his communings with the most intimate of the counsellors of his early manhood, 'Mephistopheles' Merck. The theme accompanied him on the Italian journey which completed the transformation of so much in his views of life and art; for, as is well known, he wrote the scene of the *Witch's Kitchen* in the gardens of the Villa Borghese at Rome. Here also he wrote the scene superscribed *Forest and Cavern*, with the apostrophe to the 'lofty spirit' who must be the 'Spirit of the Earth' of the first scene of the poem—an apostrophe retained in all the editions of *Faust*, though it is in truth irreconcilable with Faust's failure to compel that spirit and with his subsequent self-abandonment to the Devil, whose agent, not the agent of the Spirit of the Earth, Mephistopheles is. In Italy he also seems to have first sketched the plan of the *Second Part*; and thence he brought back the subject as a whole, to be ultimately transformed, as he had himself been, by the renascence of classical antiquity in the figure symbolising its beauty—Helena.

Thus the study of the growth of Goethe's *Faust* cannot but be described as a task of great complexity and exceptional difficulty, and has legitimately occupied efforts almost unparalleled of literary and biographical research and criticism—from Kuno Fischer and Düntzer to Bielschowsky. Here a few words must suffice. It is certain that the idea of dramatising the story of Faust, in its full significance as the story of humanity, had occupied Goethe's mind for some time before, in 1772, he put part of it on paper—as it would seem in response to the demand of his friend Friedrich Wilhelm Gotter, to whom and other friends of the Table Round at Wetzlar he had spoken of his *Faust* project. Among the earliest portions of the drama reproduced in later printed versions were the opening soliloquy, the appearance of the Spirit of the Earth, and part of the colloquy between Professor Mephisto-



pheles and the student—this last, however, in a cruder form—full of students' talk and jests. Then there was added the tragedy of Margaret, the prison-scene being originally in prose; and under the date of 1774 we learn that *Faust* was nearly ready, and that Goethe read it out in MS. to his friend Heinrich Christian Boie, and soon afterwards to Knebel, Merck, and many others. It accompanied him to Weimar, where towards the close of 1775 he read it out at Court, and where Fräulein Louisa von Göchhausen took a copy of the *Urfaust*, which was given to the world so late as 1887. And thus, in the midst of the distractions of court life and of the hard administrative labours which were not to be forgotten as essential to the development of man's nature in the *Second Part* of *Faust*, the work remained with Goethe as, so to speak, part of himself, and became known to an increasing number of friends and admirers, though only as 'a piece of a piece'. After he had brought it back from Italy, he at last—in 1790—published it, avowedly as 'a fragment', and evidently for a time with the intention that it should remain such. Goethe had returned from Italy a different man in more ways than one. He now looked with dissatisfaction upon what seemed to him the ultra-passionate naturalism of certain of the scenes which he had written—above all the soliloquy of Valentine and the prose prison-scene; and by omitting them left the tragic-story itself a fragment within a fragment. Nor had he the heart to rewrite any part of what it had been arranged to publish in the seventh volume of his collected works. Thus, for instance, the delectable notion of an academic disputation, to which the dialogue between Mephistopheles and the student was abandoned for ever. Only a chip or two of this remain in the *Paralipomena*—among the rest Mephistopheles' delightful expression of contempt for 'honest doubt'. Of this lassitude the explanation is clear: the inspiration which had long infused itself into Goethe's literary labours had ceased—his love for Charlotte von Stein was no more.



And for a long time it seemed probable that *Faust* would remain the fragment as which it had been first given to the world in 1790. Goethe's active participation, in the troubled period which followed upon the outbreak of the French Revolution, in public affairs—including military expeditions—necessarily for some years put a stop to his literary productivity, and when, under the influence of his friendship with Schiller, it was resumed, it seemed to lead his genius into calmer spheres, with which the romantic associations and the personal passions interwoven with them had little in common. But no! the poet in him had been re-awakened, and his interest in the theme of *Faust* was revived. To the year 1797 belongs the beautiful poem which Goethe afterwards prefixed under the title of 'Dedication' to the *First Part* of *Faust*, and the visions of his youth surrounded him once more. He was hereupon chiefly occupied with the task—specially characteristic of the conceptions of literature and art which he had cherished since his return from Italy—of continuing the *Iliad* under the title of the *Achilleïs*; and, as the figure of Helen rose before him, there rose with it the desire of completing that part of *Faust* of which she was to be the central personage. Thus, together with some scenes in the *First Part*, he had already composed fragments of the *Second*, when various causes, public and private—among them the death of Schiller—interfered; so that, when in 1808 *Faust* was republished once more, it still consisted only of a single part, and this was—as it now seemed, definitively—brought out as a fragment. Its new ingredients were, however, of importance. To the contents of the first edition, of 1790, was now added, in the first instance, the *Dedication* which in so beautiful a fashion attests the enduring connexion between the author's life and its favourite literary theme. Then followed (also new) the shrewdly humorous and instructive *Prelude at the Theatre*, and the marvellous *Prologue in Heaven*—known to English readers chiefly through Shelley's version, though omitted by an early



translator of Faust, who was of opinion that 'the tone of levity with which it treats matters of the most sacred nature must be repugnant to English feelings'—an astounding confession of ignorance of mediaeval literature and of ready acquiescence in the narrowness of mind common in the English literary public of the age. The 1808 fragment also added the entire series of scenes from Faust's attempt at suicide and his abandonment of it at the sound of the Easter bells to the compact with Mephistopheles, besides the entrance and death of Valentine, the Walpurgis-night and return of Faust, and the prison-scene, now in verse. It will be seen at a glance how much of what is poetically most beautiful in the *First Part* of *Faust* is accordingly the work of Goethe's maturity. The versification of the prison-scene shows his mastery of his art; and the diction of the scene illustrates his poetic instinct in carrying on the character of Margaret, without a single violent transition, from simple maiden to tragic heroine. The Walpurgis-night is a wonderful device of genius, as designed to represent the Devil's attempt to drown the conscience of Faust, at the time when Margaret is suffering from their joint sin, in the flood of sensual enjoyment typified by the witches' Sabbath; but the poet seems to have felt himself unable to carry it out in accordance with his original intention. The *Paralipomena* contain some of the unused material for this scene, which certainly go further in wild obscenity than could be tolerated by even the most independent of theatres. Thus the scene had to be left in a more or less fragmentary condition; nor can it be held a happy thought which substituted for the height of the action (however unspeakable might have been the adequate presentment of its original conception) the interlude of a *Walpurgis-night's Dream*. In Bielschowsky's words, this is in fact 'nothing but a heap of *Xenia* which had remained even from the great hurricane' of satirical distichs on their literary and political contemporaries, launched by Goethe and Schiller in the year 1796. They accord-



ingly nowadays require a commentary such as would fatigue a good many readers; and we may not uncharitably conclude that they were 'caviare to the general' even in the days of Mieding, the worthy mechanic and property-man of the Weimar theatre.

When Goethe brought out the 1808 edition of *Faust*, he had lost much of his sympathy with the motive idea of the story as he had first taken it over from popular tradition—the conception of a man ambitious to know, and to learn through experience what books had failed to teach him. Yet from the first Goethe, in accordance with the notions of the age in which he lived, and with the inspirations of his own genius, had expanded this conception into the general idea of a presentment of 'striving and erring humanity', and had invested this idea with flesh and blood by projecting into it much of his own personality. He had at the same time consciously shaken off a style of writing which accommodated itself to mediaeval themes and romantic folk-lore; and Schiller had strengthened the twofold tendency to a transformation of the theme and to a refinement of the form in which it was treated. Thus, when in the course of years he once more took up the subject—this time to add a *Second Part* and bring the whole to a consummation—he had in his mind completely identified the figure of Faust with struggling humanity, and come to regard him as its type. The particular aspects under which he was treated as such in the completed dramatic poem were those under which Goethe's own activity in life presents itself to us—whether as an administrator or as a man of letters; but they are all subordinated to the general point of view of humanity aspiring to perfection. This must suffice to indicate what lay at the root of the design of the *Second Part* of *Faust*, as finished by Goethe shortly before his death, and published posthumously in 1832, together with the *First Part*—no longer a 'fragment'—as it had appeared in 1808. The *First Part* of *Faust* cannot be fully judged without the *Second*, because the evolution of the subject in the



mind of the author—the process which was of course at times proleptic and at times retrospective—was not completed till he had carried out his final conception of it as a whole. And the intellectual triumph of the achieved comprehension of the whole in the framework of a single poem must be described as in its way unparalleled. Yet, though in this sense the *First Part* cannot be judged without the *Second*, yet the *First*, as has been shown in these few pages, historically stands by itself, and was not altered by Goethe when he continued the work. If the *First Part* still remains a fragment, it is such in the sense in which the lives of most men and the histories of most nations are fragments. What is past in them can be neither mended nor recalled; but that which is great in them is not wholly past, and that which is good continues to move onward, heavenward.

Among the English translations of *Part I* of Goethe's *Faust*, that by Dr. John Anster was one of the earliest, and still holds a place of its own. Some extracts from it were printed so long ago as 1820—before any part of the poem had appeared in an English dress, in other words before the date of the translation of Lord Francis Leveson Gower, afterwards Lord Ellesmere (1823), that of Professor Blackie's (1824), and that of Abraham Hayward's prose version (1833). (There were at least two others, of no particular note.) The whole of Anster's translation of the *First Part* appeared in 1835, under the title of *Faustus, a Dramatic Mystery*, together with a translation of *The Bride of Corinth*, and a lyric entitled *The First Walpurgis Night*. It was frequently reprinted in both England and Germany, and was, in 1864, followed by a translation of the *Second Part*.

Anster's version cannot, like Hayward's rather bald prose translation, claim to have been the first to enable English readers to follow closely the meaning of the original; nor can it be compared as a work of scholarship to the translation by the late Miss Anna Swanwick (1849), recently reprinted with an introduction and



notes by Dr. Karl Breul, or in technical skill to the version from the expert hand of Sir Theodore Martin (1865); while in both textual and metrical fidelity it must yield the palm to the translation published at Boston in 1871 by Mr. Bayard Taylor. Anster's work—a labour of love, undertaken in circumstances of some difficulty, as he was a barrister at Dublin, where he afterwards became Regius Professor of Civil Law—is a version so 'free' that it has been called an 'imitation' rather than a translation. But this is going too far, though the lines in the English text are stated to exceed those in the German by one-seventh, and in certain cases exhibit a much larger excess. As an inevitable result, much of the terseness of the original and with it not a little of the simplicity, *naïveté*, and pathos of particular passages, are lost in the translation. On the other hand, Anster is, if the circumstances be considered, remarkably successful in preserving the fluency, and in many passages some of the force, of Goethe's text; nor can it be denied that in the choice of epithets as well as in the turn of sentences he frequently displays a singular facility and felicity. Still, his version should not be examined too closely; it should rather be read as a whole and rapidly—a process which its best qualities suit better than those of any other translation of *Faust* with which I at least am acquainted. It thus deserves a welcome from those who (to adapt an appropriate phrase in Anster's own *Preface*) are prepared to concede that a poem, after all, will be judged—and, it may be added, ought to be judged—as a poem.

A. W. WARD.

BRAEMAR,  
September, 1907.

~~Accession~~

7078

## CONTENTS

	PAGES
THE TRAGICAL HISTORY OF DOCTOR FAUSTUS. BY CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE . . . .	1-50
GOETHE'S FAUST, PART I. TRANSLATED BY JOHN ANSTER . . . . .	51-235



[illegible]



**THE TRAGICAL HISTORY OF  
DOCTOR FAUSTUS**

**BY**

**CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE**



## DRAMATIS PERSONAE

THE POPE.

CARDINAL OF LORRAINE.

THE EMPEROR OF GERMANY.

DUKE OF VANHOLT.

FAUSTUS.

VALDES, } friends to FAUSTUS.  
CORNELIUS, }

WAGNER, servant to FAUSTUS.

Clown.

ROBIN.

RALPH.

Vintner.

Horse-courser.

A Knight.

An Old Man.

Scholars, Friars, and Attendants.

DUCHESS OF VANHOLT.

LUCIFER.

BELZEBUB.

MEPHISTOPHILIS.

Good Angel.

Evil Angel.

The Seven Deadly Sins.

Devils.

Spirits in the shapes of ALEXANDER THE GREAT, of his  
Paramour, and of HELEN.

Chorus.



# THE TRAGICAL HISTORY OF DOCTOR FAUSTUS

*Enter Chorus.*

CHORUS. Not marching now in fields of Thrasimene,  
Where Mars did mate the Carthaginians ; 5  
Nor sporting in the dalliance of love ;  
In courts of kings where state is overturn'd ;  
Nor in the pomp of proud audacious deeds,  
Intends our Muse to vaunt his heavenly verse :  
Only this, gentlemen,—we must perform  
The form of Faustus' fortunes, good or bad :  
To patient judgements we appeal our plaud,  
And speak for Faustus in his infancy.  
Now is he born, his parents base of stock,  
In Germany, within a town call'd Rhodes :  
Of riper years, to Wittenberg he went,  
Whereas his kinsmen chiefly brought him up.  
So soon he profits in divinity,  
The fruitful plot of scholarism grac'd,  
That shortly he was grac'd with doctor's name,  
Excelling all whose sweet delight disputes  
In heavenly matters of theology ;  
Till swoln with cunning, of a self-conceit,  
His waxen wings did mount above his reach,  
And, melting, heavens conspir'd his overthrow ;  
For, falling to a devilish exercise,  
And glutted now with learning's golden gifts,  
He offers up upon cursèd necromancy ;  
Noting so sweet as magic is to him,  
Which he prefers before his chiefest bliss :  
And this the man that in his study sits.

*[Exit.]*

## SCENE I. FAUSTUS'S STUDY

FAUSTUS *discovered.*

FAUSTUS. Settle thy studies, Faustus, and begin  
 To sound the depth of that thou wilt profess:  
 Having commenc'd, be a divine in show,  
 Yet level at the end of every art,  
 And live and die in Aristotle's works.  
 Sweet Analytics, 'tis thou hast ravish'd me!  
*Bene disserere est finis logices.*

Is, to dispute well, logic's chiefest end?  
 Affords this art no greater miracle?  
 Then read no more; thou hast attain'd that end. ✓  
 A greater subject fitteth Faustus' wit:  
 Bid Economy farewell, and Galen come,  
 Seeing, *Ubi desinit philosophus, ibi incipit medicus*:  
 Be a physician, Faustus; heap up gold,  
 And be eterniz'd for some wondrous cure!  
*Summum bonum medicinae sanitas*:

The end of physic is our body's health.  
 Why, Faustus, hast thou not attain'd that end?  
 Is not thy common talk found aphorisms?  
 Are not thy bills hung up as monuments,  
 Whereby whole cities have escap'd the plague,  
 And thousand desp'rate maladies been eas'd?  
 Yet art thou still but Faustus, and a man.  
 Couldst thou make men to live eternally,  
 Or, being dead, raise them to life again,  
 Then this profession were to be esteem'd.  
 Physic, farewell! Where is Justinian?  
*Si una eademque res legatur duobus, alter rer*  
*valorem rei, &c.*

A pretty case of paltry legacies!  
*Exhaereditare filium non potest pater, nisi, &c.*  
 Such is the subject of the institute,

[Rec

su  
hi  
ch



And universal body of the law :  
 His study fits a mercenary drudge,  
 Who aims at nothing but external trash ;  
 Too servile and illiberal for me.  
 When all is done, divinity is best :  
 Jerome's Bible, Faustus ; view it well. [Reads.  
*Stipendium peccati mors est. Ha ! Stipendium, &c.*  
 The reward of sin is death : that's hard. [Reads.  
*Si peccasse negamus, fallimur, et nulla est in nobis veritas :*  
 If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves,  
 and there's no truth in us.  
 Why, then, belike we must sin, and so consequently die :  
 Aye, we must die an everlasting death.  
 What doctrine call you this, *Che sera, sera :*  
 What will be, shall be ? Divinity, adieu !  
 These metaphysics of magicians,  
 And necromantic books are heavenly ;  
 Lines, circles, scenes, letters, and characters ;  
 Aye, these are those that Faustus most desires.  
 O, what a world of profit and delight,  
 Of power, of honour, of omnipotence,  
 Is promis'd to the studious artizan !  
 All things that move between the quiet poles  
 Shall be at my command : emperors and kings  
 Are but obey'd in their several provinces,  
 Nor can they raise the wind, or rend the clouds ;  
 But his dominion that exceeds in this,  
 Stretcheth as far as doth the mind of man ;  
 A sound magician is a mighty god :  
 Here, Faustus, tire thy brains to gain a deity !

*Enter WAGNER.*

Wagner, commend me to my dearest friends,  
 The German Valdes and Cornelius ;  
 For request them earnestly to visit me.  
 And WAGNER. I will, sir. [Exit.  
 He FAUSTUS. Their conference will be a greater help  
 Not to me  
 Whan all my labours, plod I ne'er so fast.  
 And



*Enter Good Angel and Evil Angel.*

GOOD ANGEL. O, Faustus, lay that damnèd book  
aside,

And gaze not on it, lest it tempt thy soul,  
And heap God's heavy wrath upon thy head!  
Read, read the Scriptures:—that is blasphemy.

EVIL ANGEL. Go forward, Faustus, in that famous  
art

Wherein all Nature's treasure is contain'd:  
Be thou on earth as Jove is in the sky,  
Lord and commander of these elements. [*Exeunt Angels.*]

FAUSTUS. How am I gluttèd with conceit of this!  
Shall I make spirits fetch me what I please,  
Resolve me of all ambiguities,  
Perform what desperate enterprise I will?  
I'll have them fly to India for gold,  
Ransack the ocean for orient pearl,  
And search all corners of the new-found world  
For pleasant fruits and princely delicacies;  
I'll have them read me strange philosophy,  
And tell the secrets of all foreign kings;  
I'll have them wall all Germany with brass,  
And make swift Rhine circle fair Wittenberg;  
I'll have them fill the public schools with silk,  
Wherewith the students shall be bravely clad;  
I'll levy soldiers with the coin they bring,  
And chase the Prince of Parma from our land,  
And reign sole king of all our provinces;  
Yea, stranger engines for the brunt of war,  
Than was the fiery keel at Antwerp's bridge,  
I'll make my servile spirits to invent.

*Enter VALDES and CORNELIUS.*

Come, German Valdes, and Cornelius,  
And make me blest with your sage conference!  
Valdes, sweet Valdes, and Cornelius,  
Know that your words have won me at the last



## SCENE I

7

To practise magic and concealèd arts :  
Yet not your words only, but mine own fantasy,  
That will receive no object ; for my head  
But ruminates on necromantic skill.

Philosophy is odious and obscure ;  
Both law and physic are for petty wits ;  
Divinity is basest of the three,  
Unpleasant, harsh, contemptible, and vile :  
'Tis magic, magic, that hath ravish'd me.  
Then, gentle friends, aid me in this attempt ;  
And I, that have with concise syllogisms  
Gravell'd the pastors of the German church,  
And made the flowering pride of Wittenberg  
Swarm to my problems, as the infernal spirits  
On sweet Musaeus when he came to hell,  
Will be as cunning as Agrippa was,  
Whose shadows made all Europe honour him.

VALDES. Faustus, these books, thy wit, and our  
experience,  
Shall make all nations to canonize us.  
As Indian Moors obey their Spanish lords,  
So shall the subjects of every element  
Be always serviceable to us three ;  
Like lions shall they guard us when we please ;  
Like Almain rutters with their horsemen's staves,  
Or Lapland giants, trotting by our sides ;  
Sometimes like women, or unwedded maids,  
Shadowing more beauty in their airy brows  
Than have the white breasts of the queen of love :  
From Venice shall they drag huge argosies,  
And from America the golden fleece  
That yearly stuffs old Philip's treasury ;  
If learned Faustus will be resolute.

FAUSTUS. Valdes, as resolute am I in this  
As thou to live : therefore object it not.

CORNELIUS. The miracles that magic will perform  
Will make thee vow to study nothing else.  
He that is grounded in astrology,  
Enrich'd with tongues, well seen in minerals,  
Hath all the principles magic doth require :



Then doubt not, Faustus, but to be renown'd,  
And more frequented for this mystery  
Than heretofore the Delphian oracle.

The spirits tell me they can dry the sea,  
And fetch the treasure of all foreign wrecks,  
Aye, all the wealth that our forefathers hid  
Within the massy entrails of the earth:  
Then tell me, Faustus, what shall we three want?

FAUSTUS. Nothing, Cornelius. O, this cheers my  
soul!

Come, show me some demonstrations magical,  
That I may conjure in some lusty grove,  
And have these joys in full possession.

VALDES. Then haste thee to some solitary grove,  
And bear wise Bacon's and Albanus' works,  
The Hebrew Psalter, and New Testament;  
And whatsoever else is requisite

We will inform thee ere our conference cease.

CORNELIUS. Valdes, first let him know the words of  
art;

And then, all other ceremonies learn'd,  
Faustus may try his cunning by himself.

VALDES. First I'll instruct thee in the rudiments,  
And then wilt thou be perfecter than I.

FAUSTUS. Then come and dine with me, and, after  
meat,

We'll canvass every quiddity thereof;  
For, ere I sleep, I'll try what I can do:  
This night I'll conjure, though I die therefore.

[*Exeunt.*]



## SCENE II. BEFORE FAUSTUS'S HOUSE

*Enter Two Scholars.*

FIRST SCHOLAR. I wonder what's become of Faustus, that was wont to make our schools ring with *sic probo*.

SECOND SCHOLAR. That shall we know; for see, here comes his boy.

*Enter WAGNER.*

FIRST SCHOLAR. How now, sirrah! where's thy master?

WAGNER. God in heaven knows.

SECOND SCHOLAR. Why, dost not thou know?

WAGNER. Yes, I know; but that follows not.

FIRST SCHOLAR. Go to, sirrah! leave your jesting, and tell us where he is.

WAGNER. That follows not necessary by force of argument, that you, being licentiate, should stand upon't: therefore acknowledge your error, and be attentive.

SECOND SCHOLAR. Why, didst thou not say thou knewest?

WAGNER. Have you any witness on't?

FIRST SCHOLAR. Yes, sirrah, I heard you.

WAGNER. Ask my fellow if I be a thief.

SECOND SCHOLAR. Well, you will not tell us?

WAGNER. Yes, sir, I will tell you: yet, if you were not dunces, you would never ask me such a question; for is not he *corpus naturale*? and is not that *mobile*? then wherefore should you ask me such a question? But that I am by nature phlegmatic, slow to wrath, it were not for you to come within forty foot of the place of execution, although I do not doubt to see you both hanged the next sessions. Thus having triumphed over you, I will set my countenance like a precisian.

and begin to speak thus:—Truly, my dear brethren, my master is within at dinner, with Valdes and Cornelius, as this wine, if it could speak, it would inform your worships: and so, the Lord bless you, preserve you, and keep you, my dear brethren, my dear brethren!  
[*Exit.*

FIRST SCHOLAR. Nay, then, I fear he is fallen into that damned art for which they two are infamous through the world.

SECOND SCHOLAR. Were he a stranger, and not allied to me, yet should I grieve for him. But, come, let us go and inform the Rector, and see if he by his grave counsel can reclaim him.

FIRST SCHOLAR. O, but I fear me nothing can reclaim him!

SECOND SCHOLAR. Yet let us try what we can do.  
[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III. A GROVE

*Enter FAUSTUS to conjure.*

FAUSTUS. Now that the gloomy shadow of the earth,  
Longing to view Orion's drizzling look,  
Leaps from th' antarctic world unto the sky,  
And dims the welkin with her pitchy breath,  
Faustus, begin thine incantations,  
And try if devils will obey thy hest,  
Seeing thou hast pray'd and sacrific'd to them.  
Within this circle is Jehovah's name,  
Forward and backward anagrammatiz'd,  
The breviated names of holy saints,  
Figures of every adjunct to the heavens,  
And characters of signs and erring stars,  
By which the spirits are enforc'd to rise:  
Then fear not, Faustus, but be resolute,  
And try the uttermost magic can perform.—  
*Sint mihi dei Acherontis propitii! Valeat numen triplex*



*Jehovae ! Ignei, aerii, aquatani spiritus, salvete !  
Orientis princeps Belzebub, inferni ardentis monarcha, et  
Demogorgon, propitiamus vobis, ut appareat et surgat  
Mephistophilis, quod tumeraris : per Jehovah, Gehennam,  
et consecratam aquam quam nunc spargo, signumque  
crucis quod nunc facio, et per vota nostra, ipse nunc surgat  
nobis dicatus Mephistophilis !*

*Enter MEPHISTOPHILIS.*

I charge thee to return, and change thy shape ;  
Thou art too ugly to attend on me :  
Go, and return an old Franciscan friar ;  
That holy shape becomes a devil best.

*[Exit MEPHISTOPHILIS.]*

I see there's virtue in my heavenly words :  
Who would not be proficient in this art ?  
How pliant is this Mephistophilis,  
Full of obedience and humility !  
Such is the force of magic and my spells :  
No, Faustus, thou art conjuror laureat,  
That canst command great Mephistophilis :  
*Quin regis Mephistophilis fratris imagine.*

*Re-enter MEPHISTOPHILIS like a Franciscan friar.*

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Now, Faustus, what wouldst thou  
have me do ?

FAUSTUS. I charge thee wait upon me whilst I live,  
To do whatever Faustus shall command,  
Be it to make the moon drop from her sphere,  
Or th' ocean to overwhelm the world.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. I am a servant to great Lucifer,  
And may not follow thee without his leave :  
No more than he commands must we perform.

FAUSTUS. Did not he charge thee to appear to me ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. No, I came hither of mine own  
accord.

FAUSTUS. Did not my conjuring speeches raise thee ?  
speak.



MEPHISTOPHILIS. That was the cause, but yet *per accidens* ;

For, when we hear one rack the name of God,  
Abjure the Scriptures and his Saviour Christ,  
We fly, in hope to get his glorious soul ;  
Nor will we come, unless he use such means  
Whereby he is in danger to be damn'd.  
Therefore the shortest cut for conjuring  
Is stoutly to abjure the Trinity,  
And pray devoutly to the prince of hell.

FAUSTUS. So Faustus hath  
Already done ; and holds this principle,  
There is no chief but only Belzebub ;  
To whom Faustus doth dedicate himself.  
This word 'damnation' terrifies him not,  
For he confounds hell in Elysium :  
His ghost be with the old philosophers !  
But, leaving these vain trifles of men's souls,  
Tell me what is that Lucifer thy lord ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Arch-regent and commander of all  
spirits.

FAUSTUS. Was not that Lucifer an angel once ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Yes, Faustus, and most dearly  
lov'd of God.

FAUSTUS. How comes it, then, that he is prince of  
devils ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. O, by aspiring pride and insolence ;  
For which God threw him from the face of heaven.

FAUSTUS. And what are you that live with Lucifer ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Unhappy spirits that fell with  
Lucifer,

Conspir'd against our God with Lucifer,  
And are for ever damn'd with Lucifer.

FAUSTUS. Where are you damn'd ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. In hell.

FAUSTUS. How comes it, then, that thou art out of  
hell ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Why, this is hell, nor am I out of it :  
Think'st thou that I, who saw the face of God,  
And tasted the eternal joys of heaven,



Am not tormented with ten thousand hells,  
In being depriv'd of everlasting bliss ?

O, Faustus, leave these frivolous demands,  
Which strike a terror to my fainting soul !

7 FAUSTUS. What, is great Mephistophilis so pas-  
sionate

For being deprivèd of the joys of heaven ?  
Learn thou of Faustus manly fortitude,  
And scorn those joys thou never shalt possess.  
Go bear these tidings to great Lucifer :  
Seeing Faustus hath incurr'd eternal death  
By desp'rate thoughts against Jove's deity,  
Say, he surrenders up to him his soul,  
So he will spare him four and twenty years,  
Letting him live in all voluptuousness ;  
Having thee ever to attend on me,  
To give me whatsoever I shall ask,  
To tell me whatsoever I demand,  
To slay mine enemies, and aid my friends,  
And always be obedient to my will.  
Go and return to mighty Lucifer,  
And meet me in my study at midnight,  
And then resolve me of thy master's mind.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. I will, Faustus. *[Exit.]*

// FAUSTUS. Had I as many souls as there be stars,  
I'd give them all for Mephistophilis.  
By him I'll be great emp'ror of the world,  
And make a bridge thorough the moving air,  
To pass the ocean with a band of men ;  
I'll join the hills that bind the Afric shore,  
And make that country continent to Spain,  
And both contributory to my crown :  
The Emp'ror shall not live but by my leave,  
Nor any potentate of Germany.  
Now that I have obtain'd what I desir'd,  
I'll live in speculation of this art,  
Till Mephistophilis return again.

of  
t:



## SCENE IV. A STREET

*Enter WAGNER and Clown.*

WAGNER. Sirrah boy, come hither.

CLOWN. How, boy ! swowns, boy ! I hope you have seen many boys with such pickadevaunts as I have : boy, quotha !

WAGNER. Tell me, sirrah, hast thou any <sup>income</sup>comings in ?

CLOWN. Aye, and goings out too. You may see else.

WAGNER. Alas, poor slave ! see how poverty jesteth in his nakedness ! the villain is bare and out of service, and so hungry, that I know he would give his soul to the devil for a shoulder of mutton, though it were blood-raw.

CLOWN. How ! my soul to the devil for a shoulder of mutton, though 'twere blood-raw ! not so, good friend : by'r lady, I had need have it well roasted, and good sauce to it, if I pay so dear.

WAGNER. Well, wilt thou serve me, and I'll make thee go like *Qui mihi discipulus* ?

CLOWN. How, in verse ?

WAGNER. No, sirrah ; in beaten silk and staves-acre.

CLOWN. How, how, knaves-acre ! aye, I thought that was all the land his father left him. Do ye hear ? I would be sorry to rob you of your living.

WAGNER. Sirrah, I say in staves-acre.

CLOWN. Oho, oho, staves-acre ! why, then, belike, if I were your man, I should be full of vermin.

WAGNER. So thou shalt, whether thou beest with me or no. But, sirrah, leave your jesting, and bind yourself presently unto me for seven years, or I'll turn all the lice about thee into familiars, and they shall tear thee in pieces.

CLOWN. Do you hear, sir ? you may save that labour ; they are too familiar with me already : swowns, they are as bold with my flesh as if they had paid for my meat and drink.



WAGNER. Well, do you hear, sirrah ? hold, take these guilders. *[Gives money.]*

CLOWN. Gridirons, what be they ?

WAGNER. Why, French crowns.

CLOWN. Mass, but for the name of French crowns, a man were as good have as many English counters. And what should I do with these ?

WAGNER. Why, now, sirrah, thou art at an hour's warning, whensoever and wheresoever the devil shall fetch thee.

CLOWN. No, no ; here, take your gridirons again.

WAGNER. Truly, I'll none of them.

CLOWN. Truly, but you shall.

WAGNER. Bear witness I gave them him.

CLOWN. Bear witness I give them you again.

WAGNER. Well, I will cause two devils presently to fetch thee away.—Baliol and Belcher !

CLOWN. Let your Balio and your Belcher come here, and I'll knock them, they were never so knocked since they were devils : say I should kill one of them, what would folks say ? 'Do ye see yonder tall fellow in the round slop ? he has killed the devil.' So I should be called Kill-devil all the parish over.

*Enter two Devils ; and the Clown runs up and down crying.*

WAGNER. Baliol and Belcher,—spirits, away !  
*[Exeunt Devils.]*

CLOWN. What, are they gone ? a vengeance on them ! they have vile long nails. There was a he-devil and a she-devil : I'll tell you how you shall know them ; all he-devils has horns, and all she-devils has cloven feet.

WAGNER. Well, sirrah, follow me.

CLOWN. But, do you hear ? if I should serve you, would you teach me to raise up Banios and Belcheos ?

WAGNER. I will teach thee to turn thyself to any thing, to a dog, or a cat, or a mouse, or a rat, or any thing.



CLOWN. How ! a Christian fellow to a dog, or a cat, a mouse, or a rat ! no, no, sir ; if you turn me into any thing, let it be into the likeness of a little pretty frisking flea, that I may be here and there and everywhere.

WAGNER. Well, sirrah, come.

CLOWN. But, do you hear, Wagner ?

WAGNER. How !—Baliol and Belcher !

CLOWN. O Lord, I pray, sir, let Banio and Belcher go sleep.

WAGNER. Villain, call me Master Wagner, and let thy left eye be diametarily fixed upon my right heel, with *quasi vestigias nostras insistere*. [Exit.

CLOWN. God forgive me, he speaks Dutch fustian. Well, I'll follow him ; I'll serve him, that 's flat. [Exit.

## SCENE V. FAUSTUS'S STUDY

FAUSTUS *discovered*.

FAUSTUS. Now, Faustus, must  
Thou needs be damn'd, and canst thou not be sav'd :  
What boots it, then, to think of God or heaven ?  
Away with such vain fancies, and despair ;  
Despair in God, and trust in Belzebub :  
Now go not backward ; no, Faustus, be resolute :  
Why waver'st thou ? O, something soundeth in mine  
ears,

' Abjure this magic, turn to God again !'  
Aye, and Faustus will turn to God again.  
To God ? he loves thee not ;  
The god thou serv'st is thine own appetite,  
Wherein is fix'd the love of Belzebub :  
To him I'll build an altar and a church,  
And offer lukewarm blood of new-born babes.



*Enter Good Angel and Evil Angel.*

GOOD ANGEL. Sweet Faustus, leave that execrable art.

FAUSTUS. Contrition, prayer, repentance—what of them?

GOOD ANGEL. O, they are means to bring thee unto heaven!

EVIL ANGEL. Rather illusions, fruits of lunacy, That makes men foolish that do trust them most.

GOOD ANGEL. Sweet Faustus, think of heaven and heavenly things.

EVIL ANGEL. No, Faustus; think of honour and of wealth. *[Exeunt Angels.]*

FAUSTUS. Of wealth!

Why, the signiory of Emden shall be mine.  
When Mephistophilis shall stand by me,  
What god can hurt thee, Faustus? thou art safe:  
Cast no more doubts.—Come, Mephistophilis,  
And bring glad tidings from great Lucifer;—  
Is't not midnight?—come, Mephistophilis,  
*Veni, veni, Mephistophile!*

*Enter MEPHISTOPHILIS.*

Now tell me what says Lucifer, thy lord?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. That I shall wait on Faustus while he lives,

So he will buy my service with his soul.

FAUSTUS. Already Faustus hath hazarded that for thee.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. But, Faustus, thou must bequeath it solemnly,

And write a deed of gift with thine own blood;

For that security craves great Lucifer.

If thou deny it, I will back to hell.

FAUSTUS. Stay, Mephistophilis, and tell me, what good

Will my soul do thy lord?



MEPHISTOPHILIS. Enlarge his kingdom.

FAUSTUS. Is that the reason why he tempts us thus ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. *Solamen miseris socios habuisse doloris.*

FAUSTUS. Why, have you any pain that torture others ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. As great as have the human souls of men.

But tell me, Faustus, shall I have thy soul ?  
And I will be thy slave, and wait on thee,  
And give thee more than thou hast wit to ask.

FAUSTUS. Aye, Mephistophilis, I give it thee.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Then, Faustus, stab thine arm courageously,

And bind thy soul, that at some certain day  
Great Lucifer may claim it as his own ;  
And then be thou as great as Lucifer.

FAUSTUS. [*Stabbing his arm*] Lo, Mephistophilis, for love of thee,

I cut mine arm, and with my proper blood  
Assure my soul to be great Lucifer's,  
Chief lord and regent of perpetual night !  
View here the blood that trickles from mine arm,  
And let it be propitious for my wish.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. But, Faustus, thou must  
Write it in manner of a deed of gift.

FAUSTUS. Aye, so I will [*Writes*]. But, Mephistophilis,

My blood congeals, and I can write no more.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. I'll fetch thee fire to dissolve it straight. [*Exit.*]

FAUSTUS. What might the staying of my blood portend ?

Is it unwilling I should write this bill ?

Why streams it not, that I may write afresh ?

*Faustus gives to thee his soul* : ah, there it stay'd !

Why shouldst thou not ? is not thy soul thine own ?

Then write again, *Faustus gives to thee his soul.*



*Re-enter MEPHISTOPHILIS with a chafer of coals.*

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Here's fire; come, Faustus, set it on.

FAUSTUS. So, now the blood begins to clear again; Now will I make an end immediately. *[Writes.]*

MEPHISTOPHILIS. O, what will not I do to obtain his soul? *[Aside.]*

FAUSTUS. *Consummatum est*; this bill is ended, And Faustus hath bequeath'd his soul to Lucifer. But what is this inscription on mine arm?

*Homo, fuge*: whither should I fly?

If unto God, he'll throw me down to hell.

My senses are deceiv'd; here's nothing writ:—

I see it plain; here in this place is writ,

*Homo, fuge*: yet shall not Faustus fly.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. I'll fetch him somewhat to delight his mind. *[Aside, and then exit.]*

*Re-enter MEPHISTOPHILIS with Devils, who give crowns and rich apparel to FAUSTUS, dance, and then depart.*

FAUSTUS. Speak, Mephistophilis, what means this show?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Nothing, Faustus, but to delight thy mind withal,

And to show thee what magic can perform.

FAUSTUS. But may I raise up spirits when I please?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Aye, Faustus, and do greater things than these.

FAUSTUS. Then there's enough for a thousand souls.

Here, Mephistophilis, receive this scroll,

A deed of gift of body and of soul:

But yet conditionally that thou perform

All articles prescrib'd between us both.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Faustus, I swear by hell and Lucifer

To effect all promises between us made!



FAUSTUS. Then hear me read them. *[Reads]*  
*On these conditions following. First, that Faustus may be a spirit in form and substance. Secondly, that Mephistophilis shall be his servant, and at his command. Thirdly, that Mephistophilis shall do for him, and bring him whatsoever [he desires]. Fourthly, that he shall be in his chamber or house invisible. Lastly, that he shall appear to the said John Faustus, at all times, in what form or shape soever he please. I, John Faustus, of Wittenberg, Doctor, by these presents, do give both body and soul to Lucifer prince of the east, and his minister Mephistophilis; and furthermore grant unto them that, twenty-four years being expired, the articles above written inviolate, full power to fetch or carry the said John Faustus, body and soul, flesh, blood, or goods, into their habitation wheresoever. By me, JOHN FAUSTUS.*

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Speak, Faustus, do you deliver this as your deed?

FAUSTUS. Aye, take it, and the devil give thee good on 't.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Now, Faustus, ask what thou wilt.

FAUSTUS. First will I question with thee about hell. Tell me, where is the place that men call hell?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Under the heavens.

FAUSTUS. Aye, but whereabout?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Within the bowels of these elements,  
Where we are tortur'd and remain for ever:  
Hell hath no limits, nor is circumscrib'd  
In one self place; for where we are is hell,  
And where hell is, there must we ever be:  
And, to conclude, when all the world dissolves,  
And every creature shall be purified,  
All places shall be hell that are not heaven.

FAUSTUS. Come, I think hell's a fable.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Aye, think so still, till experience change thy mind.

FAUSTUS. Why, think'st thou, then, that Faustus shall be damn'd?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Aye, of necessity, for here's the scroll



Wherein thou hast given thy soul to Lucifer.

FAUSTUS. Aye, and body too : but what of that ?  
Think'st thou that Faustus is so fond to imagine  
That, after this life, there is any pain ?

Tush, these are trifles and mere old wives' tales.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. But, Faustus, I am an instance to  
prove the contrary ;  
For I am damnèd, and am now in hell.

FAUSTUS. How ! now in hell !  
Nay, an this be hell, I'll willingly be damn'd here :  
What ! walking, disputing, &c.  
But, leaving off this, let me have a wife,  
The fairest maid in Germany.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. How ! a wife !  
I prithee, Faustus, talk not of a wife.

FAUSTUS. Nay, sweet Mephistophilis, fetch me one ;  
for I will have one.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Well, thou wilt have one ? Sit  
there till I come :  
I'll fetch thee a wife in the devil's name. [Exit.

*Re-enter MEPHISTOPHILIS with a Devil drest like  
a Woman, with fireworks.*

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Tell me, Faustus, how dost thou  
like thy wife ?

FAUSTUS. A plague on her !

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Tut, Faustus,  
Marriage is but a ceremonial toy ;  
If thou lovest me, think no more of it.  
She whom thine eye shall like, thy heart shall have,  
Be she as chaste as was Penelope,  
As wise as Saba, or as beautiful  
As was bright Lucifer before his fall.  
Hold, take this book, peruse it thoroughly :

[Gives book.

The iterating of these lines brings gold ;  
The framing of this circle on the ground  
Brings whirlwinds, tempests, thunder, and lightning ;  
Pronounce this thrice devoutly to thyself,



And men in armour shall appear to thee,  
Ready to execute what thou desir'st.

FAUSTUS. Thanks, Mephistophilis ; yet fain would  
I have a book wherein I might behold all spells and  
incantations, that I might raise up spirits when I please.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Here they are in this book.

*[Turns to them.]*

FAUSTUS. Now would I have a book where I might  
see all characters and planets of the heavens, that  
I might know their motions and dispositions.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Here they are too.

*[Turns to them.]*

FAUSTUS. Nay, let me have one book more,—and  
then I have done,—wherein I might see all plants,  
herbs, and trees, that grow upon the earth.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Here they be.

FAUSTUS. O, thou art deceived.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Tut, I warrant thee.

*[Turns to them.]*

## SCENE VI. IN THE HOUSE OF FAUSTUS

FAUSTUS. When I behold the heavens, then I repent,  
And curse thee, wicked Mephistophilis,  
Because thou hast depriv'd me of those joys.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Why, Faustus,  
Thinkest thou heaven is such a glorious thing ?  
I tell thee, 'tis not half so fair as thou,  
Or any man that breathes on earth.

FAUSTUS. How prov'st thou that ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. 'Twas made for man, therefore is  
man more excellent.

FAUSTUS. If it were made for man, 'twas made for  
me :

I will renounce this magic and repent.



*Enter Good Angel and Evil Angel.*

GOOD ANGEL. Faustus, repent ; yet God will pity thee.

EVIL ANGEL. Thou art a spirit ; God cannot pity thee.

FAUSTUS. Who buzzeth in mine ears I am a spirit ?  
Be I a devil, yet God may pity me ;  
Aye, God will pity me, if I repent.

EVIL ANGEL. Aye, but Faustus never shall repent.  
[*Exeunt Angels.*]

FAUSTUS. My heart 's so harden'd, I cannot repent :  
Scarce can I name salvation, faith, or heaven,  
But fearful echoes thunder in mine ears,  
' Faustus, thou art damn'd ! ' Then swords, and knives,  
Poison, guns, halters, and envenom'd steel  
Are laid before me to dispatch myself ;  
And long ere this I should have slain myself,  
Had not sweet pleasure conquer'd deep despair.  
Have not I made blind Homer sing to me  
Of Alexander's love and Oenon's death ?  
And hath not he, that built the walls of Thebes  
With ravishing sound of his melodious harp,  
Made music with my Mephistophilis ?  
Why should I die, then, or basely despair ?  
I am resolv'd ; Faustus shall ne'er repent.—  
Come, Mephistophilis, let us dispute again,  
And argue of divine astrology.  
Tell me, are there many heavens above the moon ?  
Are all celestial bodies but one globe,  
As is the substance of this centric earth ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. As are the elements, such are the  
spheres,  
Mutually folded in each other's orb,  
And, Faustus,  
All jointly move upon one axletree,  
Whose terminine is term'd the world's wide pole ;  
Nor are the names of Saturn, Mars, or Jupiter  
Feign'd, but are erring stars.



FAUSTUS. But, tell me, have they all one motion, both *situ et tempore* ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. All jointly move from east to west in twenty-four hours upon the poles of the world ; but differ in their motion upon the poles of the zodiac.

FAUSTUS. Tush,  
These slender trifles Wagner can decide :  
Hath Mephistophilis no greater skill ?  
Who knows not the double motion of the planets ?  
The first is finish'd in a natural day ;  
The second thus : as Saturn in thirty years ; Jupiter  
in twelve ; Mars in four ; the Sun, Venus, and Mercury  
in a year ; the Moon in twenty-eight days. Tush,  
these are freshmen's suppositions. But, tell me, hath  
every sphere a dominion or *intelligentia* ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Aye.

FAUSTUS. How many heavens or spheres are there ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Nine ; the seven planets, the firmament, and the empyreal heaven.

FAUSTUS. Well, resolve me in this question : why have we not conjunctions, oppositions, aspects, eclipses, all at one time, but in some years we have more, in some less ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. *Per inaequalem motum respectu totius.*

FAUSTUS. Well, I am answered. Tell me who made the world ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. I will not.

FAUSTUS. Sweet Mephistophilis, tell me.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Move me not, for I will not tell thee.

FAUSTUS. Villain, have I not bound thee to tell me any thing ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Aye, that is not against our kingdom ; but this is. Think thou on hell, Faustus, for thou art damned.



*Re-enter Good Angel and Evil Angel.*

GOOD ANGEL. Think, Faustus, upon God that made the world.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Remember this. *[Exit.*

FAUSTUS. Aye, go, accursèd spirit, to ugly hell !  
'Tis thou hast damn'd distressèd Faustus' soul.  
Is 't not too late ?

EVIL ANGEL. Too late.

GOOD ANGEL. Never too late, if Faustus can repent.

EVIL ANGEL. If thou repent, devils shall tear thee in pieces.

GOOD ANGEL. Repent, and they shall never raze thy skin. *[Exeunt Angels.*

FAUSTUS. Aye, Christ, my Saviour,  
Seek to save distressèd Faustus' soul !

*Enter LUCIFER, BELZEBUB, and MEPHISTOPHILIS.*

LUCIFER. Christ cannot save thy soul, for he is just  
There's none but I have int'rest in the same.

FAUSTUS. O, who art thou that look'st so terrible ?

LUCIFER. I am Lucifer,  
And this is my companion-prince in hell.

FAUSTUS. O, Faustus, they are come to fetch away thy soul !

LUCIFER. We come to tell thee thou dost injure us ;  
Thou talk'st of Christ, contráry to thy promise :  
Thou shouldst not think of God : think of the devil,  
And of his dam too.

FAUSTUS. Nor will I henceforth : pardon me in this,  
And Faustus vows never to look to heaven,  
Never to name God, or to pray to him,  
To burn his Scriptures, slay his ministers,  
And make my spirits pull his churches down.

LUCIFER. Do so, and we will highly gratify thee.  
Faustus, we are come from hell to show thee some  
pastime : sit down, and thou shalt see all the Seven  
Deadly Sins appear in their proper shapes.



FAUSTUS. That sight will be as pleasing unto me,  
As Paradise was to Adam, the first day  
Of his creation.

LUCIFER. Talk not of Paradise nor creation ; but  
mark this show : talk of the devil, and nothing else.  
—Come away !

*Enter the Seven Deadly Sins.*

Now, Faustus, examine them of their several names  
and dispositions.

FAUSTUS. What art thou, the first ?

PRIDE. I am Pride. I disdain to have any parents.  
I am like Ovid's flea ; I can creep into every corner ;  
sometimes, like a periwig, I sit upon a wench's brow ;  
or, like a fan of feathers, I kiss her lips. But, fie, what  
a scent is here ! I'll not speak another word, except  
the ground were perfumed, and covered with cloth of  
arras.

FAUSTUS. What art thou, the second ?

COVETOUSNESS. I am Covetousness ; and, might  
I have my wish, I would desire that this house and all  
the people in it were turned to gold, that I might lock  
you up in my good chest, O my sweet gold !

FAUSTUS. What art thou, the third ?

WRATH. I am Wrath. I had neither father nor  
mother : I leapt out of a lion's mouth when I was  
scarce half-an-hour old ; and ever since I have run up  
and down the world with this case of rapiers, wounding  
myself when I had nobody to fight withal. I was born  
in hell ; and look to it, for some of you shall be my  
father.

FAUSTUS. What art thou, the fourth ?

ENVY. I am Envy, born of a chimney-sweeper and  
an oyster-wife. I cannot read, and therefore wish all  
books were burnt. I am lean with seeing others eat.  
O, that there would come a famine through all the  
world, that all might die, and I live alone ! then thou  
shouldst see how fat I would be. But must thou sit,  
and I stand ? come down, with a vengeance !



FAUSTUS. Away, envious rascal!—What art thou, the fifth?

GLUTTONY. Who I, sir? I am Gluttony. My parents are all dead, and the devil a penny they have left me, but a bare pension, and that is thirty meals a-day and ten bevers,—a small trifle to suffice nature. O, I come of a royal parentage! my grandfather was a Gammon of Bacon, my grandmother a Hogshead of Claret-wine; my godfathers were these, Peter Pickle-herring and Martin Martlemas-beef; O, but my god-mother, she was a jolly gentlewoman, and well beloved in every good town and city; her name was Mistress Margery March-beer. Now, Faustus, thou hast heard all my progeny; wilt thou bid me to supper?

FAUSTUS. No, I'll see thee hanged; thou wilt eat up all my victuals.

GLUTTONY. Then the devil choke thee!

FAUSTUS. Choke thyself, glutton!—What art thou, the sixth?

SLOTH. I am Sloth. I was born on a sunny bank, where I have lain ever since; and you have done me great injury to bring me from thence: let me be carried thither again by Gluttony and Lechery. I'll not speak another word for a king's ransom.

FAUSTUS. What are you, Mistress Minx, the seventh and last?

LECHERY. Who, I, sir? The first letter of my name begins with Lechery.

LUCIFER. Away, to hell, to hell! [*Exeunt the Sins.*] Now, Faustus, how dost thou like this?

FAUSTUS. O, this feeds my soul!

LUCIFER. Tut, Faustus, in hell is all manner of delight.

FAUSTUS. O, might I see hell, and return again, How happy were I then!

LUCIFER. Thou shalt; I will send for thee at midnight.

In meantime take this book; peruse it thoroughly, And thou shalt turn thyself into what shape thou wilt.

FAUSTUS. Great thanks, mighty Lucifer!



This will I keep as chary as my life.

LUCIFER. Farewell, Faustus, and think on the devil.

FAUSTUS. Farewell, great Lucifer. Come, Mephistophilis. *[Exeunt omnes.]*

*Enter Chorus.*

CHORUS. Learned Faustus,  
To know the secrets of astronomy  
Graven in the book of Jove's high firmament,  
Did mount himself to scale Olympus' top,  
Being seated in a chariot burning bright,  
Drawn by the strength of yoky dragons' necks.  
He now is gone to prove cosmography,  
And, as I guess, will first arrive at Rome,  
To see the Pope and manner of his court,  
And take some part of holy Peter's feast,  
That to this day is highly solemniz'd. *[Exit.]*

## SCENE VII. THE POPE'S PRIVY-CHAMBER

*Enter FAUSTUS and MEPHISTOPHILIS.*

FAUSTUS. Having now, my good Mephistophilis,  
Pass'd with delight the stately town of Trier,  
Environ'd round with airy mountain-tops,  
With walls of flint, and deep-entrenchèd lakes,  
Not to be won by any conquering prince;  
From Paris next, coasting the realm of France,  
We saw the river Maine fall into Rhine,  
Whose banks are set with groves of fruitful vines;  
Then up to Naples, rich Campania,  
Whose buildings fair and gorgeous to the eye,  
The streets straight forth, and pav'd with finest brick,  
Quarter the town in four equivalents;  
There saw we learnèd Maro's golden tomb,  
The way he cut, an English mile in length,



Thorough a rock of stone, in one night's space ;  
From thence to Venice, Padua, and the rest,  
In one of which a sumptuous temple stands,  
That threatens the stars with her aspiring top.  
Thus hitherto hath Faustus spent his time :  
But tell me now what resting-place is this ?  
Hast thou, as erst I did command,  
Conducted me within the walls of Rome ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Faustus, I have ; and, because we  
will not be unprovided, I have taken up his Holiness'  
privy-chamber for our use.

FAUSTUS. I hope his Holiness' will bid us welcome.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Tut, 'tis no matter, man ; we'll be  
bold with his good cheer.

And now, my Faustus, that thou may'st perceive  
What Rome containeth to delight thee with,  
Know that this city stands upon seven hills  
That underprop the groundwork of the same :  
Just through the midst runs flowing Tiber's stream,  
With winding banks that cut it in two parts ;  
Over the which four stately bridges lean,  
That make safe passage to each part of Rome :  
Upon the bridge call'd Ponte Angelo  
Erected is a castle passing strong,  
Within whose walls such store of ordnance are,  
And double cannons fram'd of carvèd brass,  
As match the days within one complete year ;  
Besides the gates, and high pyramides,  
Which Julius Caesar brought from Africa.

FAUSTUS. Now, by the kingdoms of infernal rule,  
Of Styx, of Acheron, and the fiery lake  
Of ever-burning Phlegethon, I swear  
That I do long to see the monuments  
And situation of bright-splendent Rome :  
Come, therefore, let's away.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Nay, Faustus, stay : I know you'd  
fain see the Pope,

And take some part of holy Peter's feast,  
Where thou shalt see a troop of bald-pate friars,  
Whose *summum bonum* is in belly-cheer.



FAUSTUS. Well, I'm content to compass then some sport,  
And by their folly make us merriment.  
Then charm me, that I  
May be invisible, to do what I please,  
Unseen of any whilst I stay in Rome.

[MEPHISTOPHILIS charms him.]

MEPHISTOPHILIS. So, Faustus; now  
Do what thou wilt, thou shalt not be discern'd.

*Sound a Sonnet. Enter the POPE and the CARDINAL OF LORRAINE to the banquet, with Friars attending.*

POPE. My Lord of Lorraine, will't please you draw near?

FAUSTUS. Fall to, and the devil choke you, an you spare!

POPE. How now! who's that which spake?—Friars, look about.

FIRST FRIAR. Here's nobody, if it like your Holiness.

POPE. My lord, here is a dainty dish was sent me from the Bishop of Milan.

FAUSTUS. I thank you, sir. [Snatches the dish.]

POPE. How now! who's that which snatched the meat from me? will no man look?—My lord, this dish was sent me from the Cardinal of Florence.

FAUSTUS. You say true; I'll ha't. [Snatches the dish.]

POPE. What, again?—My lord, I'll drink to your grace.

FAUSTUS. I'll pledge your grace. [Snatches the cup.]

CARDINAL OF LORRAINE. My lord, it may be some ghost, newly crept out of Purgatory, come to beg a pardon of your Holiness.

POPE. It may be so.—Friars, prepare a dirge to lay the fury of this ghost.—Once again, my lord, fall to.

[The POPE crosses himself.]

FAUSTUS. What, are you crossing of yourself?  
Well, use that trick no more, I would advise you.

[The POPE crosses himself again.]

Well, there's the second time. Aware the third;



I give you fair warning.

*[The POPE crosses himself again, and FAUSTUS hits him a box of the ear ; and they all run away.]*

Come on, Mephistophilis ; what shall we do ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Nay, I know not : we shall be cursed with bell, book, and candle.

FAUSTUS. How ! bell, book, and candle,—candle, book, and bell,—

Forward and backward, to curse Faustus to hell !  
Anon you shall hear a hog grunt, a calf bleat, and an  
ass bray,  
Because it is Saint Peter's holiday.

*Re-enter all the Friars to sing the Dirge.*

FIRST FRIAR. Come, brethren, let's about our business with good devotion.

*They sing.*

*Cursed be he that stole away his Holiness' meat from the table ! maledicat Dominus !*

*Cursed be he that struck his Holiness a blow on the face ! maledicat Dominus !*

*Cursed be he that took Friar Sandelo a blow on the pate ! maledicat Dominus !*

*Cursed be he that disturbeth our holy dirge ! maledicat Dominus !*

*Cursed be he that took away his Holiness' wine ! maledicat Dominus !*

*Et omnes Sancti ! Amen !*

*[MEPHISTOPHILIS and FAUSTUS beat the Friars and fling fireworks among them ; and so exeunt.]*

*Enter Chorus.*

CHORUS. When Faustus had with pleasure ta'en the  
view

Of rarest things, and royal courts of kings,  
He stay'd his course, and so returnèd home ;



Where such as bear his absence but with grief,  
 I mean his friends and near'st companions,  
 Did gratulate his safety with kind words,  
 And in their conference of what befell,  
 Touching his journey through the world and air,  
 They put forth questions of astrology,  
 Which Faustus answer'd with such learnèd skill  
 As they admir'd and wonder'd at his wit.  
 Now is his fame spread forth in every land:  
 Amongst the rest the Emperor is one,  
 Carolus the Fifth, at whose palace now  
 Faustus is feasted 'mongst his noblemen.  
 What there he did, in trial of his art,  
 I leave untold; your eyes shall see['t] perform'd.  
[Exit.]

## SCENE VII. NEAR AN INN

*Enter ROBIN the Ostler, with a book in his hand.*

ROBIN. O, this is admirable! here I ha' stolen one of Doctor Faustus' conjuring-books, and, i'faith, I mean to search some circles for my own use.

*Enter RALPH, calling ROBIN.*

RALPH. Robin, prithee, come away; there's a gentleman tarries to have his horse, and he would have his things rubbed and made clean: he keeps such a chafing with my mistress about it; and she has sent me to look thee out; prithee, come away.

ROBIN. Keep out, keep out, or else you are blown up, you are dismembered, Ralph: keep out, for I am about a roaring piece of work.

RALPH. Come, what doest thou with that same book? thou canst not read?

ROBIN. Yes, my master and mistress shall find that I can read.



RALPH. Why, Robin, what book is that ?

ROBIN. What book ! why, the most intolerable book for conjuring that e'er was invented by any brimstone devil.

RALPH. Canst thou conjure with it ?

ROBIN. I can do all these things easily with it ; first, I can make thee drunk with ippocras at any tavern in Europe for nothing ; that 's one of my conjuring works.

RALPH. Our Master Parson says that 's nothing.

ROBIN. True, Ralph : and more, Ralph, if thou hast any mind to Nan Spit, our kitchenmaid,—

RALPH. O, brave, Robin ! shall I have Nan Spit ? On that condition I'll feed thy devil with horse-bread as long as he lives, of free cost.

ROBIN. No more, sweet Ralph ; let 's go and make clean our boots, which lie foul upon our hands, and then to our conjuring in the devil's name. [*Excunt.*]

## SCENE IX. THE SAME

*Enter ROBIN and RALPH with a silver goblet.*

ROBIN. Come, Ralph : did not I tell thee, we were for ever made by this Doctor Faustus' book ? *Ecce, signum !* here 's a simple purchase for horse-keepers : our horses shall eat no hay as long as this lasts.

RALPH. But, Robin, here comes the Vintner.

ROBIN. Hush ! I'll gull him supernaturally.

*Enter Vintner.*

Drawer, I hope all is paid ; God be with you !—Come, Ralph.

VINTNER. Soft, sir ; a word with you. I must yet have a goblet paid from you, ere you go.

ROBIN. I a goblet, Ralph, I a goblet !—I scorn you ; and you are but a, &c. I a goblet ! search me.



VINTNER. I mean so, sir, with your favour.

[Searches ROBIN.

ROBIN. How say you now ?

VINTNER. I must say somewhat to your fellow.—  
You, sir !

RALPH. Me, sir ! me, sir ! search your fill. [Vintner searches him.] Now; sir, you may be ashamed to burden honest men with a matter of truth.

VINTNER. Well, tone of you hath this goblet about you.

RALPH. You lie, drawer, 'tis afore me [*Aside*].—Sirrah you, I'll teach you to impeach honest men;—stand by;—I'll scour you for a goblet;—stand aside you had best, I charge you in the name of Belzebub.—Look to the goblet, Ralph [*Aside to RALPH*].

VINTNER. What mean you, sirrah ?

ROBIN. I'll tell you what I mean. [*Reads from a book*] *Sanctobulorum Periphrasticon*—nay, I'll tickle you, Vintner.—Look to the goblet, Ralph [*Aside to RALPH*].—[*Reads*] *Polypragmos Belseborams framanto pacostiphos tostus, Mephistophilis, &c.*

*Enter MEPHISTOPHILIS, sets squibs at their backs,  
and then exit. They run about.*

VINTNER. *O, nomine Domine !* what meanest thou Robin ? thou hast no goblet.

RALPH. *Peccatum peccatorum !*—Here's thy goblet, good Vintner. [*Gives the goblet to Vintner, who exit.*

ROBIN. *Misericordia pro nobis !* what shall I do ? Good devil, forgive me now, and I'll never rob thy library more.

*Re-enter MEPHISTOPHILIS.*

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Monarch of hell, under whose black survey

Great potentates do kneel with awful fear,  
Upon whose altars thousand souls do lie,  
How am I vexèd with these villains' charms !



From Constantinople am I hither come,  
Only for pleasure of these damnèd slaves.

ROBIN. How, from Constantinople ! you have had  
a great journey : will you take sixpence in your purse  
to pay for your supper, and be gone ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Well, villains, for your presumption,  
I transform thee into an ape, and thee into a dog ; and  
so be gone. [Exit.

ROBIN. How, into an ape ! that 's brave : I'll have  
fine sport with the boys ; I'll get nuts and apples enow.

RALPH. And I must be a dog.

ROBIN. I' faith, thy head will never be out of the  
pottage-pot. [Exeunt.

## SCENE X

## THE EMPEROR'S COURT AT INNSBRUCK

Enter EMPEROR, FAUSTUS, and a Knight, with Attendants,  
among whom MEPISTOPHHILIS.

EMPEROR. Master Doctor Faustus, I have heard  
strange report of thy knowledge in the black art, how  
that none in my empire nor in the whole world can  
compare with thee for the rare effects of magic : they  
say thou hast a familiar spirit, by whom thou canst  
accomplish what thou list. This, therefore, is my  
request, that thou let me see some proof of thy skill,  
that mine eyes may be witnesses to confirm what mine  
ears have heard reported : and here I swear to thee,  
by the honour of mine imperial crown, that, whatever  
thou doest, thou shalt be no ways prejudiced or  
endamaged.

KNIGHT. I' faith, he looks much like a conjurer. [Aside.

FAUSTUS. My gracious sovereign, though I must  
confess myself far inferior to the report men have published,  
and nothing answerable to the honour of your  
imperial majesty, yet, for that love and duty binds me



thereunto, I am content to do whatsoever your majesty shall command me.

EMPEROR. Then, Doctor Faustus, mark what I shall say.

As I was sometime solitary set  
 Within my closet, sundry thoughts arose  
 About the honour of mine ancestors,  
 How they had won by prowess such exploits,  
 Got such riches, subdued so many kingdoms,  
 As we that do succeed, or they that shall  
 Hereafter possess our throne, shall  
 (I fear me) ne'er attain to that degree  
 Of high renown and great authority:  
 Amongst which kings is Alexander the Great,  
 Chief spectacle of the world's pre-eminence,  
 The bright shining of whose glorious acts  
 Lightens the world with his reflecting beams,  
 As when I hear but motion made of him,  
 It grieves my soul I never saw the man:  
 If, therefore, thou, by cunning of thine art,  
 Canst raise this man from hollow vaults below,  
 Where lies entomb'd this famous conqueror,  
 And bring with him his beauteous paramour, *hah hah*  
 Both in their right shapes, gesture, and attire  
 They us'd to wear during their time of life,  
 Thou shalt both satisfy my just desire,  
 And give me cause to praise thee whilst I live.

FAUSTUS. My gracious lord, I am ready to accomplish your request, so far forth as by art and power of my spirit I am able to perform.

KNIGHT. I' faith, that's just nothing at all. [*Aside.*]

FAUSTUS. But, if it like your grace, it is not in my ability to present before your eyes the true substantial bodies of those deceased princes, which long since are consumed to dust.

KNIGHT. Aye, marry, Master Doctor, now there's a sign of grace in you, when you will confess the truth. [*Aside.*]

FAUSTUS. But such spirits as can lively resemble Alexander and his paramour shall appear before your



grace, in that manner that they both lived in, in their most flourishing estate ; which I doubt not shall sufficiently content your imperial majesty.

EMPEROR. Go to, Master Doctor ; let me see them presently.

KNIGHT. Do you hear, Master Doctor ? you bring Alexander and his paramour before the Emperor !

FAUSTUS. How then, sir ?

KNIGHT. I' faith, that 's as true as Diana turned me to a stag.

FAUSTUS. No, sir ; but, when Actaeon died, he left the horns for you.—Mephistophilis, be gone.

[Exit MEPHISTOPHILIS.

KNIGHT. Nay, an you go to conjuring, I'll be gone.

[Exit.

FAUSTUS. I'll meet with you anon for interrupting me so.—Here they are, my gracious lord.

*Re-enter MEPHISTOPHILIS with Spirits in the shapes of ALEXANDER and his Paramour.*

EMPEROR. Master Doctor, I heard this lady, while she lived, had a wart or mole in her neck : how shall I know whether it be so or no ?

FAUSTUS. Your highness may boldly go and see.

EMPEROR. Sure, these are no spirits, but the true substantial bodies of those two deceased princes.

[Exeunt Spirits.

FAUSTUS. Will 't please your highness now to send for the knight that was so pleasant with me here of late ?

EMPEROR. One of you call him forth. [Exit Attendant.

*Re-enter the Knight with a pair of horns on his head.*

How now, sir knight ! Feel on thy head.

KNIGHT. Thou damnèd wretch and execrable dog, Bred in the concave of some monstrous rock, How dar'st thou thus abuse a gentleman ? Villain, I say, undo what thou hast done !

FAUSTUS. O, not so fast, sir ! there 's no haste : but,



good, are you remembered how you crossed me in my conference with the Emperor? I think I have met with you for it.

EMPEROR. Good Master Doctor, at my entreaty release him: he hath done penance sufficient.

FAUSTUS. My gracious lord, not so much for the injury he offered me here in your presence, as to delight you with some mirth, hath Faustus worthily requited this injurious knight; which being all I desire, I am content to release him of his horns:—and, sir knight, hereafter speak well of scholars.—Mephistophilis, transform him straight. [MEPHISTOPHILIS *removes the horns.*]—Now, my good lord, having done my duty, I humbly take my leave.

EMPEROR. Farewell, Master Doctor: yet, ere you go, Expect from me a bounteous reward.

[*Exeunt* EMPEROR, Knight, and Attendants.]

## SCENE XI

### A GREEN; AFTERWARDS THE HOUSE OF FAUSTUS

FAUSTUS. Now, Mephistophilis, the restless course That time doth run with calm and silent foot, Short'ning my days and thread of vital life, Calls for the payment of my latest years: *beginning with a solemn note* Therefore, sweet Mephistophilis, let us Make haste to Wittenberg.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. What, will you go on horse-back or on foot?

FAUSTUS. Nay, till I'm past this fair and pleasant green, I'll walk on foot.

*Enter a Horse-courser.*

HORSE-COURSER. I have been all this day seeking one Master Fustian: mass, see where he is!—God save you, Master Doctor!

FAUSTUS. What, horse-courser! you are well met.



HORSE-COURSER. Do you hear, sir ? I have brought you forty dollars for your horse.

FAUSTUS. I cannot sell him so. If thou likest him for fifty, take him.

HORSE-COURSER. Alas, sir, I have no more !—I pray you speak for me.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. I pray you, let him have him : he is an honest fellow, and he has a great charge, neither wife nor child.

FAUSTUS. Well, come, give me your money [Horse-courser gives FAUSTUS the money] : my boy will deliver him to you. But I must tell you one thing before you have him ; ride him not into the water, at any hand.

HORSE-COURSER. Why, sir, will he not drink of all waters ?

FAUSTUS. O, yes, he will drink of all waters ; but ride him not into the water : ride him over hedge or ditch, or where thou wilt, but not into the water.

HORSE-COURSER. Well, sir.—Now am I made man for ever : I'll not leave my horse for forty : if he had but the quality of hey-ding-ding, hey-ding-ding, I'd make a brave living on him : he has a buttock as slick as an eel [*Aside*].—Well, God b'wi'ye sir : your boy will deliver him me : but, hark ye, sir ; if my horse be sick or ill at ease, you'll tell me what it is ?

FAUSTUS. Away, you villain ! what, dost think I am a horse-doctor ?

[*Exit Horse-courser.*]

What art thou, Faustus, but a man condemn'd to die ?

Thy fatal time doth draw to final end ;

Despair doth drive distrust unto my thoughts :

Confound these passions with a quiet sleep :

'Tush, Christ did call the thief upon the Cross ;

Then rest thee, Faustus, quiet in conceit.

[*Sleeps in his chair.*]

*Re-enter Horse-courser, all wet, crying.*

HORSE-COURSER. Alas, alas ! Doctor Fustian, quotha ? mass, Doctor Lopus was never such a doctor : has given me a purgation, has purged me of forty



dollars ; I shall never see them more. But yet, like an ass as I was, I would not be ruled by him, for he bade me I should ride him into no water : now I, thinking my horse had had some rare quality that he would not have had me known of, I, like a venturous youth, rid him into the deep pond at the town's end. I was no sooner in the middle of the pond, but my horse vanished away, and I sat upon a bottle of hay, never so near drowning in my life. But I'll seek out my doctor, and have my forty dollars again, or I'll make it the dearest horse !—O, yonder is his snipper-snapper. *Meph.*  
—Do you hear ? you, heypass, where 's your master ?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Why, sir, what would you ? you cannot speak with him.

HORSE-COURSER. But I will speak with him.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Why, he 's fast asleep : come some other time.

HORSE-COURSER. I'll speak with him now, or I'll break his glass-windows about his ears.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. I tell thee, he has not slept this eight nights.

HORSE-COURSER. An he have not slept this eight weeks, I'll speak with him.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. See, where he is, fast asleep.

HORSE-COURSER. Aye, this is he.—God save ye, Master Doctor, Master Doctor, Master Doctor Fustian ! forty dollars, forty dollars for a bottle of hay !

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Why, thou seest he hears thee not.

HORSE-COURSER. So-ho, ho ! so-ho, ho ! [*Holla's in his ear.*] No, will you not wake ? I'll make you wake ere I go. [*Pulls FAUSTUS by the leg, and pulls it away.*] Alas, I am undone ! what shall I do ?

FAUSTUS. O, my leg, my leg !—Help, Mephistophilis ! call the officers !—My leg, my leg !

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Come, villain, to the constable.

HORSE-COURSER. O Lord, sir, let me go, and I'll give you forty dollars more !

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Where be they ?

HORSE-COURSER. I have none about me : come to my ostry, and I'll give them you.



MEPHISTOPHILIS. Be gone quickly.

[Horse-courser *runs away*.

FAUSTUS. What, is he gone ? farewell he ! Faustus has his leg again, and the Horse-courser, I take it, a bottle of hay for his labour : well, this trick shall cost him forty dollars more.

*Enter* WAGNER.

How now, Wagner ! what's the news with thee ?

WAGNER. Sir, the Duke of Vanholt doth earnestly entreat your company.

FAUSTUS. The Duke of Vanholt ! an honourable gentleman, to whom I must be no niggard of my cunning.—Come, Mephistophilis, let's away to him.

[*Exeunt*.

## SCENE XII

### THE COURT OF THE DUKE OF VANHOLT

*Enter the* DUKE OF VANHOLT, *the* DUCHESS, *and*  
FAUSTUS.

DUKE OF VANHOLT. Believe me, Master Doctor, this merriment hath much pleased me.

FAUSTUS. My gracious lord, I am glad it contents you so well.—But it may be, madam, you take no delight in this. I have heard that women do long for some dainties or other : what is it, madam ? tell me and you shall have it.

DUCHESS OF VANHOLT. Thanks, good Master Doctor : and, for I see your courteous intent to pleasure me, I will not hide from you the thing my heart desires ; and, were it now summer, as it is January and the dead time of the winter, I would desire no better meat than a dish of ripe grapes.

FAUSTUS. Alas, madam, that's nothing !—Mephis-



tophilis, be gone. [*Exit MEPHISTOPHILIS.*] Were it a greater thing than this, so it would content you, you should have it.

*Re-enter MEPHISTOPHILIS with grapes.*

Here they be, madam: will 't please you taste on them?

DUKE OF VANHOLT. Believe me, Master Doctor, this makes me wonder above the rest, that being in the dead time of winter and in the month of January, how you should come by these grapes.

FAUSTUS. If it like your grace, the year is divided into two circles over the whole world, that, when it is here winter with us, in the contrary circle it is summer with them, as in India, Saba, and farther countries in the east; and by means of a swift spirit that I have, I had them brought hither, as ye see.—How do you like them, madam? be they good?

DUCHESS OF VANHOLT. Believe me, Master Doctor, they be the best grapes that e'er I tasted in my life before.

FAUSTUS. I am glad they content you so, madam.

DUKE OF VANHOLT. Come, madam, let us in, where you must well reward this learned man for the great kindness he hath showed to you.

DUCHESS OF VANHOLT. And so I will, my lord; and, whilst I live, rest beholding for this courtesy.

FAUSTUS. I humbly thank your grace.

DUKE OF VANHOLT. Come, Master Doctor, follow us, and receive your reward. [*Exeunt.*]



## SCENE XIII

## A ROOM IN THE HOUSE OF FAUSTUS

*Enter WAGNER.*

WAGNER. I think my master means to die shortly,  
For he hath given to me all his goods:  
And yet, methinketh, if that death were near,  
He would not banquet, and carouse, and swill  
Amongst the students, as even now he doth,  
Who are at supper with such belly-cheer  
As Wagner ne'er beheld in all his life.  
See, where they come! belike the feast is ended.

*Enter FAUSTUS with two or three Scholars, and  
MEPHISTOPHILIS.*

FIRST SCHOLAR. Master Doctor Faustus, since our  
conference about fair ladies, which was the beautiful'st  
in all the world, we have determined with ourselves  
that Helen of Greece was the admirablest lady that  
ever lived: therefore, Master Doctor, if you will do us  
that favour, as to let us see that peerless dame of  
Greece, whom all the world admires for majesty, we  
should think ourselves much beholding unto you.

FAUSTUS. Gentlemen,  
For that I know your friendship is unfeign'd,  
And Faustus' custom is not to deny  
The just requests of those that wish him well,  
You shall behold that peerless dame of Greece,  
No otherways for pomp and majesty  
Than when Sir Paris cross'd the seas with her,  
And brought the spoils to rich Dardania.  
Be silent, then, for danger is in words.

*[Music sounds, and HELEN passeth over the stage.]*

SECOND SCHOLAR. Too simple is my wit to tell her  
praise,  
Whom all the world admires for majesty.

THIRD SCHOLAR. No marvel though the angry Greeks  
pursu'd



With ten years' war the rape of such a queen,  
Whose heavenly beauty passeth all compare.

FIRST SCHOLAR. Since we have seen the pride of  
Nature's works,  
And only paragon of excellence,  
Let us depart; and for this glorious deed  
Happy and blest be Faustus evermore!

FAUSTUS. Gentlemen, farewell: the same I wish to  
you. *[Exeunt Scholars and WAGNER.]*

*Enter an Old Man.*

OLD MAN. Ah, Doctor Faustus, that I might prevail  
To guide thy steps unto the way of life,  
By which sweet path thou may'st attain the goal  
That shall conduct thee to celestial rest!  
Break heart, drop blood, and mingle it with tears,  
Tears falling from repentant heaviness  
Of thy most vile and loathsome filthiness,  
The stench whereof corrupts the inward soul  
With such flagitious crimes of heinous sins  
As no commiseration may expel,  
But mercy, Faustus, of thy Saviour sweet,  
Whose blood alone must wash away thy guilt.

FAUSTUS. Where art thou, Faustus? wretch, what  
hast thou done?  
Damn'd art thou, Faustus, damn'd; despair and die!  
Hell calls for right, and with a roaring voice  
Says, 'Faustus, come; thine hour is almost come';  
And Faustus now will come to do thee right.

*[MEPHISTOPHILIS gives him a dagger.]*

OLD MAN. Ah, stay, good Faustus, stay thy desperate  
steps!

I see an angel hovers o'er thy head,  
And, with a vial full of precious grace,  
Offers to pour the same into thy soul:  
Then call for mercy, and avoid despair.

FAUSTUS. Ah, my sweet friend, I feel  
Thy words to comfort my distressed soul!  
Leave me a while to ponder on my sins.



OLD MAN. I go, sweet Faustus; but with heavy cheer,  
Fearing the ruin of thy hopeless soul. [Exit.]

FAUSTUS. Accursèd Faustus, where is mercy now?  
I do repent; and yet I do despair:  
Hell strives with grace for conquest in my breast:  
What shall I do to shun the snares of death?

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Thou traitor, Faustus, I arrest thy soul  
For disobedience to my sovereign lord:  
Revolt, or I'll in piece-meal tear thy flesh.

FAUSTUS. Sweet Mephistophilis, entreat thy lord  
To pardon my unjust presumption,  
And with my blood again I will confirm  
My former vow I made to Lucifer.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Do it, then, quickly, with unfeignèd heart,  
Lest greater danger do attend thy drift.

[FAUSTUS stabs his arm, and writes on a paper with his blood.]

FAUSTUS. Torment, sweet friend, that base and crooked age,  
That durst dissuade me from thy Lucifer,  
With greatest torments that our hell affords.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. His faith is great; I cannot touch his soul;  
But what I may afflict his body with  
I will attempt, which is but little worth.

FAUSTUS. One thing, good servant, let me crave of thee,  
To glut the longing of my heart's desire,—  
That I might have unto my paramour  
That heavenly Helen which I saw of late,  
Whose sweet embracings may extinguish clean  
These thoughts that do dissuade me from my vow,  
And keep mine oath I made to Lucifer.

MEPHISTOPHILIS. Faustus, this, or what else thou shalt desire,  
Shall be perform'd in twinkling of an eye.



*Re-enter HELEN.*

FAUSTUS. Was this the face that launch'd a thousand ships,  
And burnt the topless towers of Ilium?—  
Sweet Helen, make me immortal with a kiss.—

*[Kisses her.]*

Her lips suck forth my soul: see where it flees!—  
Come, Helen, come, give me my soul again.  
Here will I dwell, for heaven is in these lips,  
And all is dross that is not Helena.  
I will be Paris, and for love of thee,  
Instead of Troy, shall Wittenberg be sack'd  
And I will combat with weak Menelaus,  
And wear thy colours on my plumèd crest;  
Yes, I will wound Achilles in the heel,  
And then return to Helen for a kiss.  
O, thou art fairer than the evening air  
Clad in the beauty of a thousand stars;  
Brighter art thou than flaming Jupiter  
When he appear'd to hapless Semele;  
More lovely than the monarch of the sky  
In wanton Arethusa's azur'd arms;  
And none but thou shalt be my paramour! *[Exeunt.]*

*Enter the Old Man.*

OLD MAN. Accursèd Faustus, miserable man,  
That from thy soul excludes't the grace of heaven.  
And fly'st the throne of his tribunal-seat!

*Enter Devils.*

Satan begins to sift me with his pride:  
As in this furnace God shall try my faith,  
My faith, vile hell, shall triumph over thee.  
Ambitious fiends, see how the heavens smile  
At your repulse, and laugh your state to scorn!  
Hence, hell! for hence I fly unto my God.

*[Exeunt,—on one side Devils, on the other Old Man.]*



## SCENE XIV. THE SAME

*Enter FAUSTUS, with Scholars.*

FAUSTUS. Ah, gentlemen !

FIRST SCHOLAR. What ails Faustus ?

FAUSTUS. Ah, my sweet chamber-fellow, had I lived with thee, then had I lived still ! but now I die eternally. Look, comes he not ? comes he not ?

SECOND SCHOLAR. What means Faustus ?

THIRD SCHOLAR. Belike he is grown into some sickness by being over-solitary.

FIRST SCHOLAR. If it be so, we'll have physicians to cure him.—'Tis but a surfeit ; never fear, man.

FAUSTUS. A surfeit of deadly sin, that hath damned both body and soul.

SECOND SCHOLAR. Yet, Faustus, look up to heaven ; remember God's mercies are infinite.

FAUSTUS. But Faustus' offence can ne'er be pardoned : the serpent that tempted Eve may be saved, but not Faustus. Ah, gentlemen, hear me with patience, and tremble not at my speeches ! Though my heart pants and quivers to remember that I have been a student here these thirty years, O, would I had never seen Wittenberg, never read book ! and what wonders I have done, all Germany can witness, yea, all the world ; for which Faustus hath lost both Germany and the world, yea, heaven itself, heaven, the seat of God, the throne of the blessed, the kingdom of joy ; and must remain in hell for ever,—hell, ah, hell, for ever ! Sweet friends, what shall become of Faustus, being in hell for ever ?

THIRD SCHOLAR. Yet, Faustus, call on God.

FAUSTUS. On God, whom Faustus hath abjured ! on God, whom Faustus hath blasphemed ! Ah, my God, I would weep ! but the devil draws in my tears. Gush forth blood, instead of tears ! yea, life and soul—



O, he stays my tongue ! I would lift up my hands ; but see, they hold them, they hold them !

ALL. Who, Faustus ?

FAUSTUS. Lucifer and Mephistophilis. Ah, gentlemen, I gave them my soul for my cunning !

ALL. God forbid !

FAUSTUS. God forbade it, indeed ; but Faustus hath done it : for vain pleasure of twenty-four years hath Faustus lost eternal joy and felicity. I writ them a bill with mine own blood : the date is expired ; the time will come, and he will fetch me.

FIRST SCHOLAR. Why did not Faustus tell us of this before, that divines might have prayed for thee ?

FAUSTUS. Oft have I thought to have done so ; but the devil threatened to tear me in pieces, if I named God, to fetch both body and soul, if I once gave ear to divinity : and now 'tis too late. Gentlemen, away, lest you perish with me.

SECOND SCHOLAR. O, what shall we do to save Faustus ?

FAUSTUS. Talk not of me, but save yourselves, and depart.

THIRD SCHOLAR. God will strengthen me ; I will stay with Faustus.

FIRST SCHOLAR. Tempt not God, sweet friend ; but let us into the next room, and there pray for him.

FAUSTUS. Aye, pray for me, pray for me ; and what noise soever ye hear, come not unto me, for nothing can rescue me.

SECOND SCHOLAR. Pray thou, and we will pray that God may have mercy upon thee.

FAUSTUS. Gentlemen, farewell : if I live till morning, I'll visit you ; if not, Faustus is gone to hell.

ALL. Faustus, farewell.

*[Exeunt Scholars.—The clock strikes eleven.]*

FAUSTUS. Ah, Faustus,  
Now hast thou but one bare hour to live,  
And then thou must be damn'd perpetually !  
Stand still, you ever-moving spheres of heaven,  
That time may cease, and midnight never come ;



Fair Nature's eye, rise, rise again, and make  
 Perpetual day; or let this hour be but  
 A year, a month, a week, a natural day,  
 That Faustus may repent and save his soul!

*O lente, lente currite, noctis equi!*

The stars move still, time runs, the clock will strike,  
 The devil will come, and Faustus must be damn'd.  
 O, I'll leap up to my God!—Who pulls me down?—  
 See, see, where Christ's blood streams in the firmament!  
 One drop would save my soul, half a drop: ah, my  
 Christ!—

Ah, rend not my heart for naming of my Christ!  
 Yet will I call on him: O, spare me, Lucifer!—  
 Where is it now? 'tis gone: and see, where God  
 Stretcheth out his arm, and bends his ireful brows!  
 Mountains and hills, come, come, and fall on me,  
 And hide me from the heavy wrath of God!  
 No, no!

Then will I headlong run into the earth:  
 Earth, gape! O, no, it will not harbour me!  
 You stars that reign'd at my nativity,  
 Whose influence hath allotted death and hell,  
 Now draw up Faustus, like a foggy mist,  
 Into the entrails of yon lab'ring clouds,  
 That, when you vomit forth into the air,  
 My limbs may issue from your smoky mouths,  
 So that my soul may but ascend to heaven!

*[The clock strikes the half-hour.]*

Ah, half the hour is past! 'twill all be past anon.

O God,

If thou wilt not have mercy on my soul,  
 Yet for Christ's sake, whose blood hath ransom'd me,  
 Impose some end to my incessant pain:

Let Faustus live in hell a thousand years,

A hundred thousand, and at last be sav'd!

O, no end is limited to damnèd souls!

Why wert thou not a creature wanting soul?

Or why is this immortal that thou hast?

Ah, Pythagoras' metempsychosis, were that true,  
 This soul should fly from me, and I be chang'd



Unto some brutish beast ! all beasts are happy,  
 For, when they die,  
 Their souls are soon dissolv'd in elements ;  
 But mine must live still to be plagu'd in hell.  
 Curs'd be the parents that engender'd me !  
 No, Faustus, curse thyself, curse Lucifer  
 That hath depriv'd thee of the joys of heaven.

*[The clock strikes twelve.]*

O, it strikes, it strikes ! Now, body, turn to air,  
 Or Lucifer will bear thee quick to hell !

*[Thunder and lightning.]*

O soul, be chang'd into little water-drops,  
 And fall into the ocean, ne'er be found !

*Enter Devils.*

My God, my God, look not so fierce on me !  
 Adders and serpents, let me breathe a while !  
 Ugly hell, gape not ! come not, Lucifer !  
 I'll burn my books !—Ah, Mephistophilis !

*[Exeunt Devils with FAUSTUS.]*

*Enter Chorus.*

CHORUS. Cut is the branch that might have grown  
 full straight,  
 And burnèd is Apollo's laurel-bough,  
 That sometime grew within this learned man.  
 Faustus is gone : regard his hellish fall,  
 Whose fiendful fortune may exhort the wise,  
 Only to wonder at unlawful things,  
 Whose deepness doth entice such forward wits  
 To practise more than heavenly power permits.

*[Exit.]*

*Terminat hora diem ; terminat auctor opus.*



**GOETHE'S FAUST**

**PART I**

**TRANSLATED BY JOHN ANSTER**







## DEDICATION

AGAIN, in deepening beauty, ye float near,  
Forms, dimly imaged in the days gone by—  
Is that old fancy to the heart still dear?  
To that old spell will ye again reply?  
Ye throng before my view, divinely clear,  
Like sunbeams conquering a cloudy sky!  
Then have me at your will! My bosom burns,  
Magic is breathing—youth and joy returns!

Pictures you bring with you of happy years,  
Loved shades of other days are rising fast.  
First-love with early Friendship reappears  
Like half remembered legends of the past.  
Wounds bleed anew;—the Complaint pursues with tears  
The wanderer through life's labyrinthine waste;  
And names the Good, already past away,  
Cheated, alas! of half life's little day.

But, ah! they cannot hear my closing song,  
Those hearts, for whom its earlier notes were tried;  
Departed is, alas! the friendly throng,  
And dumb the echoes all, that first replied.  
If some still live this stranger world among,  
Fortune hath scattered them at distance wide;  
To men unknown my griefs I now impart,  
Whose very praises leave me sick at heart.



Again it comes ! a long unwonted feeling—

A wish for that calm solemn spirit-land ;

My wavering song lisps faint, like murmurs, stealing

O'er Aeol's harp by varying breezes fanned.

Tears follow tears, my weaknesses revealing,

And silent shudders show a heart unmanned ;

WHAT IS, in the far distance seems to be,

THE PAST, the PAST alone is true to me.



# FAUST

## PRELUDE AT THE THEATRE

MANAGER. DRAMATIC POET. MR. MERRYMAN

MANAGER. MY two good friends, on whom I have depended,

At all times to assist me and advise ;  
Aid your old friend once more—to-night he tries  
(And greatly fears the fate that may attend it)  
For German lands a novel enterprise.  
To please the public I am most desirous ;  
'Live and let live,' has ever been their maxim,  
Gladly they pay the trifle that we tax 'em,  
And gratitude should with new zeal inspire us.  
Our temporary theatre's erected,  
Planks laid, posts raised, and something is expected.  
Already have the audience ta'en their station,  
With eyebrows lifted up in expectation ;  
Thoughtful and tranquil all—with hopes excited,  
Disposed to be amused—amazed—delighted !  
I know the people's taste—their whims—caprices,  
Could always get up popular new pieces ;  
But never have I been before so harassed  
As now—so thoroughly perplexed, embarrassed !  
Every one reads so much of everything :  
The books they read are not the best, 'tis true :  
But then they are for ever reading—reading !  
This being so, how can we hope to bring  
Anything out, that shall be good and new ?  
What chance of now as formerly succeeding ?



How I delight to see the people striving  
 To force their way into our crowded booth,  
 Pouring along, and fighting, nail and tooth,  
 Digging with elbows, through the passage driving,  
 As if it were St. Peter's gate, and leading  
 To something more desirable than Eden;  
 Long before FOUR, while daylight's strong as ever.  
 All hurrying to the box of the receiver,  
 Breaking their necks for tickets—thrusting—jamming,  
 As at a baker's door in time of famine!

On men so various in their disposition,  
 So different in manners—rank—condition;  
 How is a miracle like this effected?  
 The poet—he alone is the magician.

On thee, my friend, we call—from thee expect it.

POET. Oh, tell me not of the tumultuous crowd,  
 My powers desert me in the noisy throng;  
 Hide, hide from me the multitude, whose loud  
 And dizzy whirl would hurry me along  
 Against my will; and lead me to some lone  
 And silent vale—some scene in fairy-land,  
 There only will the poet's heart expand,  
 Surrendered to the impulses of song,  
 Lost in delicious visions of its own,  
 Where Love and Friendship o'er the heart at rest  
 Watch through the flowing hours, and we are  
 blest!

Thoughts by the soul conceived in silent joy,  
 Sounds often muttered by the timid voice,  
 Tried by the nice ear, delicate of choice,  
 Till we at last are pleased, or self-deceived,  
 The whole a rabble's madness may destroy;  
 And this, when, after toil of many years,  
 Touched and retouched, the perfect piece appears  
 To challenge praise, or win unconscious tears,  
 As the vain heart too easily believed;  
 Some sparkling, showy thing, got up in haste,



Brilliant and light, will catch the passing taste.  
The truly great, the genuine, the sublime  
Win its slow way in silence ; and the bard,  
Unnoticed long, receives from after-time  
The imperishable wreath, his best, his sole reward !

MR. MERRYMAN. Enough of this cold cant of future ages,  
And men hereafter doting on your pages ;  
To prattle thus of other times is pleasant,  
And all the while neglect our own, the PRESENT.  
Why, what if I too—Mister Merryman—  
In my vocation acted on your plan ?  
If on the unborn we squander our exertion,  
Who will supply the living with diversion ?  
And, clamour as you, authors, may about it,  
They want amusement—will not go without it ;  
Just look at me, a fine young dashing fellow—  
My very face works wonders, let me tell you ;  
—Now my way, for your guidance I may mention—  
Please but yourself, and feel no apprehension.  
The crowd will share the feelings of the poet,  
The praise he seeks they liberally bestow it :  
The more that come, the better for the writer ;  
Each flash of wit is farther felt—seems brighter,  
And every little point appreciated,  
By some one in the circle over-rated,  
All is above its value estimated :  
Take courage then,—come—now for a *chef-d'œuvre*—  
To make a name—to live and live for ever—  
Call FANCY up, with her attendant troop,  
REASON and JUDGEMENT, PASSION, MELANCHOLY,  
WIT, FEELING, and among the choral group,  
Do not forget the little darling, FOLLY !

MANAGER. But above all, give them enough of action ;  
He who gives most, will give most satisfaction ;  
They come to see a *show*—no work whatever,  
Unless it be a show, can win their favour ;  
Then, as they wish it, let them gape and stare ;—  
Crowd scene on scene—enough and still to spare.  
A show is what they want ; they love and pay for it ;  
Spite of its serious parts, sit through a play for it ;



And he who gives one is a certain favourite ;  
 Would you please many, you must give good measure ;  
 Then each finds something in 't to yield him pleasure ;  
 The more you give, the greater sure your chance is  
 To please, by varying scenes, such various fancies.  
 The interest of a piece, no doubt, increases  
 Divided thus, and broken into pieces.

We want a dish to hit the common taste ;  
 Then hash it up and serve it out in haste !  
 And, for my part, methinks it little matters :  
 Though you may call your work a finished whole,  
 The public soon will tear this whole to tatters,  
 And but on piecemeal parts their praises dole.

POET. You cannot think how very mean a task,  
 How humbling to the genuine artist's mind,  
 To furnish such a drama as you ask :  
 The poor pretender's bungling tricks, I find,  
 Are now established as the rules of trade,—  
 Receipts—by which successful plays are made !

MANAGER. Such an objection is of little weight  
 Against my reasoning. If a person chooses  
 To work effectively, no doubt he uses  
 The instrument that's most appropriate.  
 Your play may—for your audience—be too good ;—  
 Coarse lumpish logs are they of clumsy wood—  
 Blocks—with the hatchet only to be hewed !—  
 One comes to drive away ennui or spleen ;  
 Another, with o'erloaded paunch from table ;  
 A third, than all the rest less tolerable,  
 From reading a review or magazine.  
 Hither all haste, anticipate delight,  
 As to a Masque, desire each face illuming,  
 And each, some novel character assuming.  
 Place for awhile their own half out of sight.  
 The ladies, too, tricked out in brilliant gear,  
 Themselves ambitious actresses appear,  
 And, though unpaid, are still performers here.  
 What do you dream, in your poetic pride ?  
 Think you a full house can be satisfied  
 And every auditor an ardent cheerer ?



Pray, only look at them a little nearer ;  
One half are cold spectators, inattentive ;  
The other dead to every fine incentive ;  
One fellow 's thinking of a game of cards ;  
One on a wild night of intoxication :  
Why court for such a set the kind regards  
Of the coy Muse—her highest fascination ?  
I tell thee only, give enough—enough ;  
Still more and more—no matter of what stuff,  
You cannot go astray ; let all your views  
Be only for the moment to amuse,  
To keep them in amazement or distraction ;  
Man is incapable of satisfaction.  
Why, what affects you thus—is 't inspiration ?  
A reverie ?—oh ! can it be vexation ?

POET. Go, and elsewhere some fitter servant  
find ;

What ! shall the poet squander then away,  
For thy poor purposes, himself, his mind,  
Profane the gift, which Nature, when she gave  
To him, to him entrusted for mankind,  
—Their birthright—thy poor bidding to obey,  
And sink into an humble trading slave ?  
Whence is his power all human hearts to win,  
And why can nothing his proud march oppose,  
As through all elements the conqueror goes ?  
Oh, is it not the harmony within,  
The music, that hath for its dwelling-place  
His own rich soul ?—the heart that can receive  
Again into itself, again embrace  
The world it clothed with beauty and bade live ?  
With unregarding hand when Nature throws  
Upon the spindle the dull length of thread,  
That on, still on, in weary sameness flows,  
When all things, that in unison agreeing,  
Should join to form the happy web of Being  
Are tangled in inextricable strife :  
Who can awake the blank monotony  
To measured order ? Who upon the dead  
Unthinking chaos breathe the charm of life,



Restore the dissonant to harmony,  
 And bid the jarring individual be  
 A chord, that, in the general consecration,  
 Bears part with all in musical relation ?  
 Who to the tempest's rage can give a voice  
 Like human passion ? bid the serious mind  
 Glow with the colouring of the sunset hours ?  
 Who in the dear path scatter spring's first flowers,  
 When wanders forth the lady of his choice ?  
 Who of the valueless green leaves can bind  
 A wreath—the artist's proudest ornament—  
 Or, round the conquering hero's brow entwined  
 The best reward his country can present ?  
 Whose voice is fame ? who gives us to inherit  
 Olympus, and the loved Elysian field ?  
 The soul of MAN sublimed—man's soaring spirit  
 Seen in the POET, gloriously revealed.

MR. MERRYMAN. A poet yet should regulate his  
fancies,

Like that of life should get up his romances ;  
 First a chance meeting—then the young folk tarry  
 Together—toy and trifle, sigh and marry,  
 Are link'd for ever, scarcely half intending it,  
 Once met—'tis fixed—no changing and no mending it.  
 Thus a romance runs : fortune, then reverses ;  
 Rapture, then coldness ; bridal dresses—hearses ;  
 The lady dying—letters from the lover,  
 And, ere you think of it, the thing is over.  
 Shift your scenes rapidly ; write fast and gaily,  
 Give, in your play, the life we witness daily ;  
 The life which all men live, yet few men notice,  
 Yet which will please ('tis very strange, but so 'tis),  
 Will please, when forced again on their attention,  
 More than the wonders of remote invention ;  
 Glimmerings of truth—calm sentiment—smart stric-  
 tures—

Actors in bustle—clouds of moving pictures—  
 The young will crowd to see a work, revealing  
 Their own hearts to themselves ; in solitude  
 Will feast on the remembered visions—stealing



For frenzied passion its voluptuous food :  
Unbidden smiles and tears unconscious start.  
For oh ! the secrets of the poet's art,  
What are they but the dreams of the young heart ?  
Oh ! 'tis the young enjoy the poet's mood,  
Float with him on imagination's wing,  
Think all his thoughts, are his in everything,  
Are, while they dream not of it, all they see :  
Youth—youth is the true time for sympathy.  
This is the sort of drink to take the town ;  
Flavour it to their taste, they gulp it down.  
Your true admirer is the generous spirit,  
Unformed, unspoiled, he feels all kindred merit  
As if of his own being it were part,  
And growing with the growth of his own heart ;  
Feels gratitude, because he feels that truth  
Is taught him by the poet—this is Youth ;  
Nothing can please your *grown* ones, they're so knowing,  
And no one thanks the poet but the growing.

POET. Give me, oh ! give me back the days  
When I—I too—was young—  
And felt, as they now feel, each coming hour  
New consciousness of power.  
Oh happy, happy time, above all praise !  
Then thoughts on thoughts and crowding fancies sprung,  
And found a language in unbidden lays ;  
Unintermitted streams from fountains ever flowing.

Then, as I wander'd free,  
In every field, for me  
Its thousand flowers were blowing !  
A veil through which I did not see,  
A thin veil o'er the world was thrown  
In every bud a mystery ;

Magic in everything unknown :—  
The fields, the grove, the air was haunted,  
And all that age has disenchanted.  
Yes ! give me—give me back the days of youth,  
Poor, yet how rich !—my glad inheritance  
The inextinguishable love of truth,  
While life's realities were all romance—




Give me, oh ! give youth's passions unconfined,  
The rush of joy that felt almost like pain,  
Its hate, its love, its own tumultuous mind ;—  
Give me my youth again !

MR. MERRYMAN. Why, my dear friend, for youth  
thus sigh and prattle,  
'Twould be a very good thing in a battle ;  
Or on your arm if a fine girl were leaning,  
Then, I admit, the wish would have some meaning ;  
In running for a bet, to clear the distance,  
A young man's sinews would be some assistance ;  
Or if, after a dance, a man was thinking  
Of reeling out the night in glorious drinking ;  
But you have only among chords, well known  
Of the familiar harp, with graceful finger  
Freely to stray at large, or fondly linger,  
Courting some wandering fancies of your own ;  
While, with capricious windings and delays,  
Loitering, or lost in an enchanted maze  
Of sweet sounds, the rich melody, at will  
Gliding, here rests, here indolently strays,  
Is ever free, yet evermore obeys  
The hidden guide, that journeys with it still.  
This is, old gentleman, your occupation.  
Nor think that it makes less our veneration.  
'Age,' says the song, 'the faculties bewildering,  
Renders men childish'—no ! it finds them chil-  
dren.

MANAGER. Come, come, no more of this absurd  
inventory  
Of flattering phrases—courteous—complimentary.  
You both lose time in words unnecessary,  
Playing with language thus at fetch and carry ;  
Think not of tuning now or preparation,  
Strike up, my boy—no fear—no hesitation,  
Till you commence no chance of inspiration.  
But once assume the poet—then the fire  
From heaven will come to kindle and inspire.  
Strong drink is what we want to gull the people,  
A hearty, brisk, and animating tippie ;



Come, come, no more delay, no more excuses,  
The stuff we ask you for, at once produce us.  
Lose this day loitering—'twill be the same story  
To-morrow—and the next more dilatory;  
Then indecision brings its own delays,  
And days are lost lamenting o'er lost days.  
Are you in earnest? seize this very minute—  
What you can do, or dream you can, begin it,  
Boldness has genius, power, and magic in it.  
Only engage, and then the mind grows heated—  
Begin it, and the work will be completed!  
You know our German bards, like bold adventurers,  
Bring out whate'er they please, and laugh at censors,  
Then do not think to-day of sparing scenery—  
Command enough of dresses and machinery;  
Use as you please—fire, water, thunder, levin—  
The greater and the lesser lights of heaven.  
Squander away the stars at your free pleasure,  
And build up rocks and mountains without measure.  
Of birds and beasts we've plenty here to lavish,  
Come, cast away all apprehensions slavish—  
Strut, on our narrow stage, with lofty stature,  
As moving through the circle of wide nature.  
With swiftest speed, in calm thought weighing well  
Each movement—move from HEAVEN through EARTH  
to HELL.





## PROLOGUE IN HEAVEN

THE LORD, THE HEAVENLY HOSTS, *afterwards*  
MEPHISTOPHELES.

*The three Archangels come forward.*

RAPHAEL. THE sun, as in the ancient days,  
'Mong sister stars in rival song,  
His destined path observes, obeys,  
And still in thunder rolls along:  
New strength and full beatitude  
The angels gather from his sight,  
Mysterious all—yet all is good,  
All fair as at the birth of light!

GABRIEL. Swift, unimaginably swift,  
Soft spins the earth, and glories bright  
Of mid-day Eden change and shift  
To shades of deep and spectral night.  
The vexed sea foams—waves leap and moan,  
And chide the rocks with insult hoarse,  
And wave and rock are hurried on,  
And suns and stars in endless course.

MICHAEL. And winds with winds mad war main-  
tain,  
From sea to land, from land to sea;  
And heave round earth, a living chain  
Of interwoven agency.—  
Guides of the bursting thunder-peal,  
Fast lightnings flash with deadly ray,  
While, Lord, with Thee thy servants feel,  
Calm effluence of abiding day.

ALL. New strength and full beatitude  
The angels gather from thy sight;  
Mysterious all, yet all is good,  
All fair as at the birth of light.



MEPHISTOPHELES. Since Thou, O Lord, dost visit us  
once more,

To ask how things are going on, and since  
You have received me kindly heretofore,  
I venture to the levee of my prince.  
Pardon me, if I fail, after the sort  
Of bending courtiers here, to pay my court ;  
The company is far too fine for me,  
They smile with scorn such folk in heaven to see.  
High hymns and solemn words are not my forte.  
Pathos from me would look too like a joke ;  
Words, that from others had set angels weeping,  
To laughter would your very self provoke,  
If laughter were not wholly out of keeping.  
Nothing of suns or worlds have I to say,  
I only see how men fret out their day ;  
The little god of earth is still the same  
Strange thing he was, when first to life he came ;  
That life were somewhat better, if the light  
Of Heaven had not been given to spoil him quite.  
Reason he calls it—see its blessed fruit,  
Than the brute beast man is a beastlier brute ;  
He seems to me, if I may venture on  
Such a comparison, to be like one  
Of those long lank-legged grasshoppers, whose song  
The self-same creak, chirps, as they bound along,  
Monotonous and restless in the grass,  
'Twere well 'twas in grass always ; but, alas,  
They thrust their snouts in every filth they pass.

THE LORD. Hast thou no more than this to say,  
Thou, who complainest every day ?  
Are all things evil in thy sight ?  
Does nothing on the earth move right ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Not anything, my lord—poor  
men so fervent  
And foolish are—I almost feel compassion.

THE LORD. Dost thou know FAUST ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. The doctor ?

THE LORD. Yes : my servant.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Truly, he serves in a peculiar  
fashion ;



Child though he be of human birth,  
 His food and drink are not of earth.  
 Foolish—even he at times will feel  
 The folly in such hopes to deal:—  
 His fancies hurry him afar;  
 Of heaven he asks its highest star;  
 Self-willed and spoiled, in mad pursuit,  
 Of earth demands its fairest fruit;  
 And all that both can give supplied,  
 Behold him still unsatisfied!

THE LORD. Yes: for he serves in a perplexing scene,  
 That oft misleads him. Still his WILL is right;  
 Soon comes the time to lead him into light  
 Now is the first prophetic green,  
 The hopes and promises of spring,  
 The unformed bud and blossoming;  
 And he who reared the tree and knows the clime  
 Will seek and find fair fruit in fitting time.

MEPHISTOPHELES. What will you wager you don't  
 lose him yet,  
 With all his promise? Had I only freedom  
 On my own path with easy lure to lead him,  
 I've not a doubt of it I win the bet.

THE LORD. As long as on the earth endures his life  
 To deal with him have full and free permission;  
 Man's hour on earth is weakness, error, strife.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Cheerfully I agree to the condition;  
 I have no fancy for the dead: your youth,  
 With full fresh cheeks, tastes daintier to my tooth,  
 Should a corpse call, the answer at my house  
 Is, 'Not at home.' My play is cat and mouse.

THE LORD. Be it permitted: from his source divert  
 And draw this Spirit captive down with thee;  
 Till baffled and in shame thou dost admit,  
 'A good man, clouded though his senses be  
 By error, is no willing slave to it.'  
 His consciousness of good, will it desert  
 The good man?—yea, even in his darkest hours  
 Still doth he war with Darkness and the Powers



Of Darkness ;—for the light he cannot see  
Still round him feels ;—and, if he be not free,  
Struggles against this strange captivity.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Aye ! feelings that have no  
abiding—

Short struggles—Give him to my guiding—  
I cannot have a doubt about the bet.

Oh ! in what triumph shall I crow at winning !  
Dust he shall eat, and eat with pleasure yet,  
Like that first SNAKE in my poor heraldry,  
Who has been eating it from the beginning.

THE LORD. Here too take your own course—you are  
quite free

In the concern,—with anything but loathing  
I look on folk like you. My work demands  
Such servants. Of the Spirits of Denial  
The pleasantest, that figures in Man's Trial,  
Is OLD INIQUITY in his Fool's clothing ;  
The Vice is never heavy upon hands ;  
Without the Knave the Mystery were nothing.  
For MAN's activity soon tires  
(A lazy being at the best),  
And sting and spur requires.

In indolent enjoyment Man would live,  
And this companion, whom I therefore give,  
Goads, urges, drives—is devil and cannot rest.  
But ye, pure sons of God, be yours the sight  
Of Beauty, each hour brighter and more bright !  
The Life, in all around, below, above  
That ever lives and works—the Infinite  
Enfold you in the happy bonds of love !  
And all that flows unfixed and undefined  
In glimmering phantasy before the mind,  
Bid Thought's enduring chain for ever bind !

*[Heaven closes. The archangels disperse.]*

MEPHISTOPHELES (alone). I'm very glad to have it  
in my power

To see him now and then ; he is so civil :  
I rather like our good old governor—  
Think only of his speaking to the devil !



) But I, I know how deep is my debt  
I know that nothing can be known.

68

## TIME, NIGHT

SCENE.—*A high-arched, narrow, Gothic chamber.*

FAUST at his desk—restless.

FAUST. Alas ! I have explored  
Philosophy, and Law, and Medicine ;  
And over deep Divinity have pored,  
Studying with ardent and laborious zeal ;  
And here I am at last, a very fool,  
With useless learning cursed,  
No wiser than at first !  
Here am I—boast and wonder of the school ;  
*Magister, Doctor*, and I lead  
These ten years past, my pupils' creed ;  
Winding, by dexterous words, with ease,  
Their opinions as I please.  
And now to feel that nothing can be known !  
This is a thought that burns into my heart.  
I have been more acute than all these triflers,  
Doctors and authors, priests, philosophers ;  
Have sounded all the depths of every science.  
Scruples, or the perplexity of doubt,  
Torment me not, nor fears of hell or devil.  
But I have lost all peace of mind :  
Whate'er I knew, or thought I knew,  
Seems now unmeaning or untrue.  
The fancy too has died away,  
The hope, that I might, in my day,  
Instruct, and elevate mankind.  
Thus robbed of learning's only pleasure,  
Without dominion, rank, or treasure,  
Without one joy that earth can give,  
Could dog—were I a dog—so live ?  
Therefore to magic, with severe  
And patient toil, have I applied,  
Despairing of all other guide,  
That from some Spirit I might hear



Deep truths, to others unrevealed,  
And mysteries from mankind sealed;  
And never more, with shame of heart,  
Teach things, of which I know no part.  
Oh, for a glance into the earth!  
To see below its dark foundations,  
Life's embryo seeds before their birth  
And Nature's silent operations.  
Thus end at once this vexing fever  
Of words—mere words—repeated ever.

Beautiful Moon!—Ah! would that now,  
For the last time, thy lovely beams  
Shone on my troubled brow!  
Oft by this desk, at middle night,  
I have sat gazing for thy light,  
Wearied with search, through volumes endless,  
I sate 'mong papers—crowded books,  
Alone—when thou, friend of the friendless, —  
Camest smiling in, with soothing looks.  
Oh, that upon some headland height  
I now were wandering in thy light!  
Floating with Spirits, like a shadow,  
Round mountain-cave, o'er twilight meadow;  
And from the toil of thought relieved,  
No longer sickened and deceived,  
In thy soft dew could bathe, and find  
Tranquillity and health of mind,

Alas! and am I in the gloom  
Still of this cursed dungeon room?  
Where even heaven's light, so beautiful,  
Through the stained glass comes thick and dull;  
'Mong volumes heaped from floor to ceiling,  
Scrolls with book-worms through them stealing;  
Dreary walls, where dusty paper  
Bears deep stains of smoky vapour;  
Glasses, instruments, all lumber  
Of this kind the place encumber;  
All a man of learning gathers,  
All bequeathed me by my fathers,



Crucibles from years undated,  
Chairs of structure antiquated,  
Are in strange confusion hurled !  
Here, Faustus, is thy world—a world !  
— Still dost thou ask, why in thy breast  
The sick heart flutters ill at rest ?  
Why a dull sense of suffering  
Deadens life's current at the spring ?  
From living nature thou hast fled  
To dwell 'mong fragments of the dead ;  
And for the lovely scenes which Heaven  
Hath made man for, to man hath given ;  
Hast chosen to pore o'er mouldering bones  
Of brute and human skeletons !

Away—away and far away !  
This book, where secret spells are scanned,  
Traced by NOSTRADAM'S own hand,  
Will be thy strength and stay :  
The courses of the stars to thee  
No longer are a mystery ;  
The thoughts of Nature thou canst seek,  
As Spirits with their brothers speak.  
It is, it is the planet hour  
Of thy own being ; light, and power,  
And fervour to the soul are given,  
As proudly it ascends its heaven.  
To ponder here, o'er spells and signs,  
Symbolic letters, circles, lines ;  
And from their actual use refrain,  
Were time and labour lost in vain :  
Then ye, whom I feel floating near me,  
Spirits, answer, ye who hear me !

*[He opens the book, and lights upon the sign of  
MACROCOSMUS.]*

Ha ! what new life divine, intense,  
Floods in a moment every sense ;  
I feel the dawn of youth again,  
Visiting each glowing vein !  
Was it a god—a god who wrote these signs ?



The tumults of my soul are stilled, —  
 My withered heart with rapture filled :  
 In virtue of the magic lines,  
 The secret powers that nature mould,  
 Their essence and their acts unfold—  
 Am I a god?—Can mortal sight  
 Enjoy, endure this burst of light?  
 How clear these silent characters!  
 All Nature present to my view,  
 And each creative act of hers—  
 And is the glorious vision true?  
 The wise man's words at length are plain,  
 Whose sense so long I sought in vain:

'The Worlde of Spirits no Clouds conceale :  
 Man's Eye is dim, it cannot see.  
 Man's Heart is dead, it cannot feele.  
 Thou, who wouldst knowe the Things that be,  
 The Heart of Earth in the Sunrise red,  
 Bathe, till its Stains of Earth are fled.'

*[He looks over the sign attentively.]*

Oh! how the spell before my sight  
 Brings Nature's hidden ways to light:  
 See! all things with each other blending—  
 Each to all its being lending—  
 All on each in turn depending—  
 Heavenly ministers descending—  
 And again to heaven up-tending—  
 Floating, mingling, interweaving—  
 Rising, sinking, and receiving  
 Each from each, while each is giving  
 On to each, and each relieving  
 Each, the pails of gold, the living  
 Current through the air is heaving;  
 Breathing blessings, see them bending,  
 Balanced worlds from change defending,  
 While every where diffused is harmony unending!

Oh! what a vision—but a vision only!  
 Can heart of man embrace



Illimitable Nature ?  
 Fountain of life, forth-welling ;  
 The same in every place ;  
 That dost support and cheer  
 Wide heaven, and teeming earth, and every creature  
 That hath therein its dwelling,  
 Oh ! could the blighted soul but feel thee near !  
 To thee still turns the withered heart,  
 To thee the spirit, seared and lonely,  
 Childlike, would seek the sweet restorative ;  
 On thy maternal bosom feed and live.  
 I ask a solace thou dost not impart ;  
 The food I hunger for thou dost not give !

*[He turns over the leaves of the book impatiently,  
 till his eye rests on the sign of the SPIRIT OF THE  
 EARTH.]*

How differently this sign affects my frame !  
 Spirit of Earth ! my nature is the same,  
 Or near akin to thine !  
 How fearlessly I read this sign !  
 And feel even now new powers are mine ;  
 While my brain burns, as though with wine ;  
 Give me the agitated strife,  
 The madness of the world of life ;  
 I feel within my soul the birth  
 Of strength, enabling me to bear,  
 And thoughts, impelling me to share  
 The fortunes, good or evil, of the Earth ;  
 To battle with the Tempest's breath,  
 Or plunge where Shipwreck grinds his teeth.

All around grows cold and cloudy,  
 The moon withdraws her ray ;  
 The lamp's loose flame is shivering,  
 It fades, it dies away.  
 Ha ! round my brow what sparkles ruddy  
 In trembling light are quivering ?  
 And, to and fro,  
 Stream sheets of flame, in fearful play,



Rolled and unrolled,  
 In crimson fold,  
 They float and flow !  
 From the vaulted space above,  
 A shuddering horror seems to move  
 Down,—down upon me creeps and seizes  
 The life's blood, in its grasp that freezes ;  
 'Tis thou—I feel thee, SPIRIT, near,  
 Thou hast heard the spell, and thou  
 Art hovering around me now ;  
 Spirit ! to my sight appear,  
 How my heart is torn in sunder—  
 All my thoughts convulsed with wonder—  
 Every faculty and feeling  
 Strained to welcome thy revealing.  
 Spirit, my heart, my heart is given to thee,  
 Though death may be the price, I cannot choose but see !  
*[He grasps the book, and pronounces the sign of  
 the SPIRIT mysteriously ; a red flame is seen  
 playing about, and in the flame the SPIRIT.]*

SPIRIT. Who calls me ?

FAUST (*averting his face*). Form of horror, hence !

SPIRIT. Hither from my distant sphere,  
 Thou hast compelled me to appear ;  
 Hast sucked me down, and dragged me thence,  
 With importuning violence ;  
 And now—

FAUST. I shudder, overpowered with fear.

SPIRIT. Panting, praying to look on me,  
 My voice to listen, my face to see,  
 Thy soul's strong mandate bends me down to thee.  
 Here am I—here and now, what fear  
 Seizes thee ?—thee—the more than Man ?

Where the strong soul, that could dare

Summon Us, Spirits ? Where

The soul, that could conceive, and plan,  
 Yea, and create its world ; whose pride  
 The bounds which limit Man defied,  
 Heaved with high sense of inborn powers,



Nor feared to mete its strength with ours.  
 Where art thou, Faust? and, were the accents thine,  
 That rang to me? the soul that pressed itself to mine?  
 Art thou the same, whose senses thus are shattered,  
 Whose very being in my breath is scattered  
 Shuddering thro' all life's depths—poor writhing worm!

FAUST. Creature of Flame, shall I grow pale before  
 thee?

I am he, I called thee, I am Faust, thy Equal!

SPIRIT. In the currents of life, in the tempests of  
 motion,

In the fervour of act, in the fire, in the storm,

Hither and thither,

Over and under,

Wend I and wander.

Birth and the grave

Limitless ocean,

Where the restless wave

Undulates ever,

Under and over

Their seething strife,

Heaving and weaving

The changes of life.

At the whirring loom of Time unawed,

I work the living mantle of God.

FAUST. Swift Spirit, that ever round the wide world  
 heavest!

How near I feel to thee!

SPIRIT. Man, thou art as the Spirit, whom thou  
 conceivest,

Not ME.

[Vanishes.

FAUST (*overpowered with confusion*). Not thee!

Whom then? I! image of the Deity!

And not even such as thee!

[A knock.

'S death, 'tis this pupil lad of mine—

He comes my airy guests to banish.

This elevating converse dread,

These visions, dazzlingly outspread

Before my senses, all will vanish

At the formal fellow's tread!



*[Enter WAGNER in his dressing-gown and night-cap—a lamp in his hand. Faust turns round, displeased.]*

WAGNER. Forgive me, but I thought you were declaiming.

Been reciting some Greek Tragedy, no doubt;  
I wish to improve myself in this same art;  
'Tis a most useful one. I've heard it said,  
An actor might give lessons to a priest.

FAUST. Yes! when your priest's an actor, as may happen.

WAGNER. Oh! if a man shuts himself up for ever  
In his dull study; if one sees the world  
Never, unless on some chance holiday,  
Looks at it from a distance, through a telescope,  
How can we learn to sway the minds of men  
By eloquence? to rule them, or persuade?

FAUST. If feeling does not prompt, in vain you strive;

If from the soul the language does not come,  
By its own impulse, to impel the hearts  
Of hearers, with communicated power,  
In vain you strive—in vain you study earnestly.  
Toil on for ever; piece together fragments;  
Cook up your broken scraps of sentences,  
And blow, with puffing breath, a struggling light,  
Glimmering confusedly now, now cold in ashes;  
Startle the school-boys with your metaphors;  
And, if such food may suit your appetite,  
Win the vain wonder of applauding children!  
But never hope to stir the hearts of men,  
And mould the souls of many into one,  
By words which come not native from the heart!

WAGNER. EXPRESSION, graceful utterance, is the first

And best acquirement of the orator.

This do I feel, and feel my want of it!

FAUST. Be honest, if you would be eloquent;



Be not a chiming fool with cap and bells ;  
 Reason and genuine feeling want no arts  
 Of utterance—ask no toil of elocution ;  
 And when you are in earnest, do you need  
 A search for words ? Oh ! these fine holiday phrases,  
 In which you robe your worn-out commonplaces,  
 These scraps of paper which you crimp and curl,  
 And twist into a thousand idle shapes,  
 These filigree ornaments are good for nothing,  
 Cost time and pains, please few, impose on no one ;  
 Are unrefreshing, as the wind that whistles,  
 In autumn, 'mong the dry and wrinkled leaves.

WAGNER. The search of knowledge is a weary one,  
 And life how short ! *Ars longa, Vita brevis !*  
 How often have the heart and brain, o'er-tasked,  
 Shrunk back despairing from inquiries vain !  
 Oh ! with what difficulty are the means  
 Acquired, that lead us to the springs of knowledge !  
 And when the path is found, ere we have trod  
 Half the long way—poor wretches ! we must die !

FAUST. Are mouldy records, then, the holy springs,  
 Whose healing waters still the thirst within ?

Oh ! never yet hath mortal drunk

A draught restorative,

That welled not from the depths of his own soul !

WAGNER. Pardon me—but you will at least confess  
 That 'tis delightful to transfuse yourself  
 Into the spirit of the ages past ;

To see how wise men thought in olden time,  
 And how far we outstep their march in knowledge.

FAUST. Oh yes ! as far as from the earth to heaven !  
 To us, my friend, the times that are gone by  
 Are a mysterious book, sealed with seven seals :  
 That which you call the spirit of ages past  
 Is but, in truth, the spirit of some few authors  
 In which those ages are beheld reflected,  
 With what distortion strange heaven only knows.  
 Oh ! often, what a toilsome thing it is,  
 This study of thine, at the first glance we fly it.  
 A mass of things confusedly heaped together ;



A lumber-room of dusty documents,  
Furnished with all approved court-precedents,  
And old traditional maxims ! History !  
Facts dramatized say rather—action—plot—  
Sentiment, everything the writer's own,  
As it best fits the web-work of his story,  
With here and there a solitary fact  
Of consequence, by those grave chroniclers,  
Pointed with many a moral apophthegm,  
And wise old saws, learned at the puppet-shows.

WAGNER. But then the world, man's heart and mind,  
are things  
Of which 'twere well that each man had some know-  
ledge.

FAUST. Why yes !—they call it *knowledge*. Who  
may dare  
To name things by their real names ? The few  
Who did know something, and were weak enough  
To expose their hearts unguarded—to expose  
Their views and feelings to the eyes of men,  
They have been nailed to crosses—thrown to flames.  
Pardon me ; but 'tis very late, my friend ;  
Too late to hold this conversation longer.

WAGNER. How willingly would I sit up for ever,  
Thus to converse with you so learnedly.  
To-morrow, as a boon on Easter-day,  
You must permit me a few questions more :  
I have been diligent in all my studies ;  
Given my whole heart and time to the pursuit ;  
And I know much, but would know everything. [*Exit.*

FAUST (*alone*). How hope abandons not the hum-  
blest mind !  
Poor lad ! he clings to learning's poorest forms,  
Delves eagerly for fancied gold to find  
Worms—dust ; is happy among dust and worms !

Man's voice, and such a man's, and did it dare  
Breathe round me here, where Spirits thronged the air ?  
And yet, poor humble creature that thou art,  
How do I thank thee from my very heart !



When my senses sank beneath  
Despair, and sought relief in death ;  
When life within me dying shivered,  
Thy presence from the trance delivered.  
Oh, while I stood before that giant stature,  
How dwarfed I felt beneath its nobler nature !

Image of God ! I thought that I had been  
Sublimed from earth, no more a child of clay,  
That, shining gloriously with Heaven's own day,  
I had beheld Truth's countenance serene.  
High above cherubs—above all that serve,  
Raised up immeasurably—every nerve  
Of Nature's life seemed animate with mine ;  
Her very veins with blood from my veins filled—  
Her spirit moving as my spirit willed ;  
Then did I in creations of my own  
(Oh, is not man in everything divine !)  
Build worlds—or bidding them no longer be—  
Exert, enjoy a sense of deity—  
Doomed for such dreams presumptuous to atone ;  
All by one word of thunder overthrown !

Spirit, I may not mete myself with thee !  
True, I compelled thee to appear,  
But had no power to hold thee here.  
Oh ! in that rapturous moment how I felt—  
How little and how great ! and thus to be  
With savage scorn fiercely flung back upon  
The lot to mortals dealt,  
And its uncertainties ! again the prey  
Of deep disquietude ! with none  
To guide me on my way,  
Or show me what to shun !  
That impulse goads me on—shall I obey ?  
Alas ! 'tis not our sufferings alone,  
But even our acts obstruct us and delay  
Our life's free flow.

To what man's spirit conceives  
Of purest, best, some foreign growth still cleaves,



We seize what this world gives of good, and deem  
All Better a deception and a dream.  
High feelings, that in us to life gave birth,  
Are numbed and wither in the coil of earth.

How boldly, in the days of youthful Hope,  
Imagination spreads her wings unchecked,  
Deeming all things within her ample scope,  
To the ETERNAL! and how small a space  
Suffices her when Fortune flees apace,  
And all we loved in life's strange whirl is wrecked!  
Deep in the breast Care builds her nest,  
Rocks restlessly and scares away all rest.  
Some secret sorrow still the envious one  
Keeps stirring at till peace and joy are gone.  
Each day she masks her in some new disguise,  
Each day with some new trick the temper tries,  
Is House and Homestead, Child and Wife,  
Fire, Water, Poison, Dagger-knife.  
Evils that never come disquiet thee,  
Evermore mourning losses not to be!

I am not like the gods. No! no! I tremble,  
Feeling impressed upon my mind the thought,  
Of the mean worm whose nature I resemble.  
'Tis dust, and lives in dust, and the chance tread  
Crushes the wretched reptile into nought.

Is this not dust in which I live?  
This prison-place, what can it give  
Of life or comfort? wheresoe'er  
The sick eye turns, it sees one tier—  
Along the blank high wall—of shelves  
And gloomy volumes, which themselves  
Are dust and lumber; and the scrolls  
That crowd the hundred pigeon-holes  
And crevices of that old case—  
That darkens and confines the space  
Already but too small—'mong these  
What can life be but a disease?



Here housed in dust, with grub and moth,  
I sicken—mind and body both.

—Shall I find here the cure I ask,

Resume the edifying task

Of reading, in a thousand pages,

That care-worn man has, in all ages,

Sowed Vanity to reap Despair?

That one, mayhap, has here and there

Been less unhappy?

Hollow Skull,

I almost fancy I divine

A meaning in thy spectral smile.

Saith it not that thy brain, like mine,

Still loved, and sought the Beautiful;

Loved Truth for Truth's own sake; and sought,

Regardless of aught else the while,

Like mine, the light of cloudless day—

And, in unsatisfying thought

By twilight glimmers led astray,

Like mine at length sank over-wrought?

Everything fails me—everything—

These instruments, do they not all

Mock me? lathe, cylinder, and ring,

And cog and wheel—in vain I call

On you for aid, ye keys of Science,

I stand before the guarded door

Of Nature; but it bids defiance

To latch or ward: in vain I prove

Your powers—the strong bolts will not move.

Mysterious, in the blaze of day,

Nature pursues her tranquil way:

The veil she wears, if hand profane

Should seek to raise, it seeks in vain,

Though from her spirit thine receives,

When hushed it listens and believes,

Secrets—revealed, else vainly sought,

Her free gift when man questions not,—

Think not with levers or with screws

To wring them out if she refuse.



Old Furniture—cumbrous and mean !  
 It is not, has not ever been  
 Of use to me—why here ? because  
 My father's furniture it was !  
 —Old Roll ; and here it still remains,  
 And soiled with smoke, its very stains  
 Might count how many a year the light  
 Hath, from this desk, through the dead night,  
 Burn'd in its sad lamp, nothing bright !  
 —'Twere better did I dissipate,  
 Long since, my little means, than be  
 Crushed down and cumbered with its weight :  
 All that thy fathers leave to thee,  
 At once ENJOY it—thus alone  
 Can man make anything his own ;  
 A hindrance all that we employ not—  
 A burden all that we enjoy not.  
 HE knows, who rightly estimates,  
 That what the moment can employ,  
 What it requires and can enjoy,  
 The MOMENT for itself creates.

What can it be, that thither draws  
 The eye, and holds it there, as though  
 The flask a very magnet were ?  
 And whence, oh, whence this lavish glow,  
 This lustre of enchanted light,  
 Pour'd down at once, and everywhere—  
 Birth of the moment—like the flood  
 Of splendour round us, when at night  
 Breathes moonlight over a wide wood ?

Oh phial !—happy phial !—here  
 Hope is,—I greet thee,—I revere  
 Thee as Art's best result—in Thee  
 Science and Mind triumphant see,—  
 Essence of all sweet slumber-dews !  
 Spirit of all most delicate  
 Yet deadliest powers !—be thou my friend—  
 A true friend—thou wilt not refuse  
 Thine own old master this !—I gaze



On thee—the pain subsides—the weight  
That pressed me down less heavy weighs.

I grasp thee—faithful friend art thou:—  
Already do I feel the strife  
That preyed upon my powers of life  
Calmed into peace; and now—and now  
The swell, that troubled the clear spring  
Of my vexed spirit, ebbs away;  
Outspread, like ocean, Life and Day  
Shine with a glow of welcoming;—  
Calm at my feet the glorious mirror lies,  
And tempts to far-off shores, with smiles from other skies!

And, lo! a car of fire to me  
Glides softly hither; from within  
Come winged impulses, to bear  
The child of earth to freer air:  
Already do I seem to win  
My happy course, from bondage free,  
On paths unknown, to climes unknown  
Glad spheres of pure activity!  
Powers yet unfelt—worlds yet untrod—  
And life, poured everywhere abroad,  
And rapture worthy of a God!  
—Worm that thou art, and can it be  
Such joy is thine, is given to thee?  
Determine only,—'tis thy own;  
Say thy firm farewell to the sun,  
The kindly sun—its smiling earth—  
One moment, one,—and all is done,—  
One pang—then comes the second birth!  
—Find life where others fear to die;  
Take measure of thy strength, and burst—  
Burst wide the gate of liberty;  
—Show, by man's acts man's spirit durst  
Meet God's own eye, and wax not dim;  
Stand fearless, face to face with Him!

Shudder not now at that blank cave  
Where, in self-torturing disease,



Pale Fancy hears sad Spirits rave,  
And is herself the hell she sees.  
—Press through the strait, where stands Despair  
Guarding it, and the fiery wave  
Boils up,—and know no terror there!  
Determine;—be of happy cheer  
In this high hour—be thy advance  
The proud step of a triumph-day;  
—Be firm, and cast away all fear;—  
And freely,—if such be the chance—  
Flow into nothingness away!

And thou, clear crystal goblet, welcome thou!  
Old friend and faithful, from thy antique case  
Come forth with gay smile now,  
As gently I displace  
The time-stain'd velvet; years unnumbered,  
Forgotten hast thou slumbered;  
Once bright at many a festival,  
When, in the old man's hall,  
Old friends were gathered all,  
And thou with mirth didst light grave features up,  
On days of high festivity,  
And family solemnity,  
As each to each passed on the happy cup;  
Its massy pride, the figures rich and old,  
Of curious carving, and the merry task  
Of each (thus did our pleasant customs ask)  
Who drank, the quaint old symbols to unfold,  
In rhymes made at the moment; then the mask  
Of serious seeming, as at one long draught  
Each guest the full deep goblet duly quaffed;  
The old cup, the old customs, the old rhymes,  
All now are with me: all, that of old times  
Can speak, are speaking to my heart; the nights  
Of boyhood, and their manifold delights;  
Oh! never more to gay friend sitting next  
Shall my hand reach thee; never more from me  
Shall merry rhyme illustrate the old text.  
And into meaning read each mystery;



This is a draught that, if the brain still think,  
 Will set it thinking in another mood ;  
 Old cup, now fill thee with the dark brown flood ;  
 It is my choice ; I mixed it, and will drink :  
 My last draught this on earth I dedicate  
 (And with it be my heart and spirit borne !)  
 A festal offering to the rising morn.

*[He places the goblet to his mouth.]*

*Bells heard, and voices in chorus.*

EASTER HYMN.—*Chorus of Angels.*

CHRIST is from the grave arisen,  
 Joy is His. For Him the weary  
 Earth hath ceased its thralldom dreary,  
 And the cares that prey on mortals :  
 He hath burst the grave's stern portals ;  
 The grave is no prison :  
 The Lord hath arisen !

FAUST. Oh, those deep sounds, those voices rich  
 and heavenly !

How powerfully they sway the soul, and force  
 The cup uplifted from the eager lips !  
 Proud bells, and do your peals already ring,  
 To greet the joyous dawn of Easter-morn ?  
 And ye, rejoicing choristers, already  
 Flows forth your solemn song of consolation ?  
 That song, which once, from angel lips resounding  
 Around the midnight of the grave, was heard,  
 The pledge and proof of a new covenant !

HYMN continued.—*Chorus of Women.*

We laid Him for burial  
 'Mong aloes and myrrh ;  
 His children and friends  
 Laid their dead Master here !  
 All wrapt in his grave-dress,  
 We left Him in fear—  
 Ah ! where shall we seek Him  
 The Lord is not here !



*Chorus of Angels.*

The Lord hath arisen,  
Sorrow no longer ;  
Temptation hath tried Him,  
But He was the stronger.  
Happy, happy victory !  
Love, submission, self-denial  
Marked the strengthening agony,  
Marked the purifying trial ;  
The grave is no prison :  
The Lord hath arisen.

FAUST. Soft sounds, that breathe of Heaven, most  
mild, most powerful,

What seek ye here ?—Why will ye come to me  
In dusty gloom immersed ?—Oh ! rather speak  
To hearts of soft and penetrable mould !

I hear your message, but I have not faith—

// And Miracle is fond Faith's favourite child !

I cannot force myself into the spheres,  
Where these good tidings of great joy are heard ;  
And yet, from youth familiar with the sounds,  
Even now they call me back again to life ;  
Oh ! once, in boyhood's happy time, Heaven's love  
Showered down upon me, with mysterious kiss  
Hallowing the stillness of the Sabbath-day !  
Feelings resistless, incommunicable,  
Yearnings for something that I knew not of,  
Deep meanings in the full tones of the bells  
Mingled—a prayer was burning ecstasy—  
Drove me, a wanderer through lone fields and woods ;  
Then tears rushed hot and fast—then was the birth  
Of a new life and a new world for me ;  
These bells announced the merry sports of youth,  
This music welcomed in the happy spring ;  
And now am I once more a little child,  
And old Remembrance, twining round my heart,  
Forbids this act, and checks my daring steps—  
Then sing ye on—sweet songs that are of heaven !  
Tears come, and EARTH hath won her child again.



*HYMN continued.—Chorus of Disciples.*

He, who was buried,  
 Hath burst from the grave !  
 From death re-assuming  
 The life that he gave,  
 Is risen in glory,  
 Is mighty to save !

And onward—still onward  
 Arising, ascending,  
 To the right hand of Power  
 And Joy never-ending.

Enthroned in brightness,  
 His labours are over ;  
 On earth His disciples  
 Still struggle and suffer !

His children deserted  
 Disconsolate languish—  
 Thou art gone, and to glory—  
 Hast left us in anguish !

*Chorus of Angels.*

Christ is arisen,  
 The Lord hath ascended ;  
 The dominion of death  
 And corruption is ended.

Your work of obedience  
 Haste to begin ;  
 Break from the bondage  
 Of Satan and Sin.

In your lives HIS laws obey,  
 Let love your governed bosoms sway—  
 Blessings to the poor convey,  
 To GOD with humble spirit pray,  
 To MAN his benefits display :  
 Act thus, and he, your MASTER dear,  
 Though unseen, is ever near !



## BEFORE THE GATE

*Persons of all descriptions strolling out.*

A PARTY OF TRADESMEN. What are you going for in that direction ?

SECOND PARTY. We are going to the Jägerhaus.

FIRST PARTY. And we

Are strolling down to the Mill.

A TRADESMAN.

I would advise you Rather to take a walk to the Wasserhof.

A SECOND. The road to it is not a pleasant one.

SECOND PARTY. What are you for ?

A THIRD.

I go with the other party.

A FOURTH. Take my advice, and let us come to Burgdorf :

There, any way, we shall be sure of finding  
The prettiest girls, and the brownest beer,  
And lots of rows in the primeest style.

A FIFTH.

What, boy,

Art at it still ? two drubbings, one would think,  
Might satisfy a reasonable man.

I won't go there with you—I hate the place !

SERVANT MAID. No ! no ! —not I—I'll go back to the town.

ANOTHER. We'll find him surely waiting at the poplars.

THE FIRST. Great good is that to me,—he'll give his arm

To you—and dance with you—and why should I go  
For nothing in the world but your amusement ?

THE SECOND. To-day he'll certainly not be alone,  
His curly-headed friend will be with him.

STUDENT. Look there—look there—how well those girls step out—

Come, brother, come let's keep them company.

Stiff beer, biting tobacco, and a girl

In her smart dress, are the best things I know.



CITIZEN'S DAUGHTER. Only look there—what pretty fellows these are!

'Tis quite a shame, when they might have the best  
Of company, to see them running after  
A pair of vulgar minxes—servant girls.

SECOND STUDENT (*to the First*). Stay, easy—here are  
two fine girls behind us,  
Showily dressed. I know one of them well—  
And, I may say, am half in love with her.  
Innocent things! with what a modest gait  
And shy step they affect to pace; and yet,  
For all their bashfulness, they'll take us with them.

FIRST STUDENT. Join them, yourself—not I—I hate  
restraint.

Let us not lose time with them, or the game escapes.  
Give me the girl that gives a man no trouble,  
That on the week-days does her week-day work,  
And, the day after, work that she loves better.

CITIZEN. Well, I do not like this new burgomaster.  
Not a day passes but he grows more insolent,  
Forsooth! presuming on his dignity.  
And what good is he to us after all?  
The town is growing worse from day to day,  
They are more strict upon us now than ever,  
And raise continually the rates and taxes.

BEGGAR (*sings*).

*Masters good, and ladies bright,  
Rosy-cheeked, and richly dressed,  
Look upon a wretched sight,  
And relieve the poor distressed:  
Let me not in vain implore!  
Pity me!—with chime and voice  
Would I cheer you—let the poor  
When all else are glad, rejoice!  
I must beg, for I must live.  
Help me! blessed they who give!  
When all other men are gay  
Is the beggar's harvest day.*



SECOND CITIZEN. Well ! give me, on a saint's day,  
or a Sunday,

When we have time for it, a tale of war  
And warlike doings far away in Turkey—  
How they are busy killing one another.  
'Tis pleasant to stand gazing from the window,  
Draining your glass at times, and looking on  
The painted barges calmly gliding down  
The easy river. Then the homeward walk  
In the cool evening hour ; this makes the heart  
Glad, and at peace with all things and itself.  
Yes ! give me peace at home, and peaceful times !

THIRD CITIZEN. Aye, so say I—break every head  
abroad—

Turn all things topsy-turvy, so they leave us  
Quiet at home.

OLD WOMAN (*to the Citizen's Daughters*). Ha ! but  
you are nicely dressed,  
And very pretty creatures—you'll win hearts  
To-day—aye, that you will—only don't look  
So very proud—yes ! that is something better—  
I know what my young pets are wishing for,  
And thinking of, and they shall have it too !

CITIZEN'S DAUGHTER. Come, Agatha, come on—I'd  
not be seen  
With the old witch in public ; yet she showed  
me,  
On last St. Andrew's night, in flesh and blood,  
My future lover.

THE OTHER. In the glass she showed  
Me mine. The figure was a soldier's, and  
With him a band of gay bold fellows. Since,  
I have been looking round, and seeking for him,  
But all in vain—'tis folly—he won't come.

SOLDIER. *Towns with turrets, walls, and fences,  
Maidens with their haughty glances,  
These the soldier seeks with ardour,  
Say to conquer which is harder ?  
Death and danger he despises,  
When he looks upon the prizes.*



Danger is the soldier's duty,  
And his prize is fame and beauty.

*Rush we, at the trumpet's measure,  
With blithe hearts to death and pleasure ;  
How the soldier's blood is warming  
When we think of cities storming !  
Fortress strong, and maiden tender,  
Must alike to us surrender.*

Danger is the soldier's duty,  
But his prize is fame and beauty.

FAUST. River and rivulet are freed from ice  
In Spring's affectionate inspiring smile—  
Green are the fields with promise—far away  
To the rough hills old Winter hath withdrawn  
Strengthless—but still at intervals will send  
Light feeble frosts, with drops of diamond white  
Mocking a little while the coming bloom—  
Still soils with showers of sharp and bitter sleet,  
In anger impotent, the earth's green robe ;  
But the sun suffers not the lingering snow—  
Everywhere life—everywhere vegetation—  
All nature animate with glowing hues—  
Or, if one spot be touched not by the spirit  
Of the sweet season, there, in colours rich  
As trees or flowers, are sparkling human dresses !  
Turn round, and from this height look back upon  
The town : from its black dungeon gate forth pours,  
In thousand parties, the gay multitude,  
All happy, all indulging in the sunshine !  
All celebrating the Lord's resurrection,  
And in themselves exhibiting as 'twere  
A resurrection too—so changed are they,  
So raised above themselves. From chambers damp  
Of poor mean houses—from consuming toil  
Laborious—from the work-yard and the shop—  
From the imprisonment of walls and roofs,  
And the oppression of confining streets,  
And from the solemn twilight of dim churches—  
All are abroad—all happy in the sun.



Look, only look, with gaiety how active,  
Thro' fields and gardens they disperse themselves !  
How the wide water, far as we can see,  
Is joyous with innumerable boats !  
See, there, one almost sinking with its load,  
Parts from the shore ; yonder the hill-top paths  
Are sparkling in the distance with gay dresses !  
And, hark ! the sounds of joy from the far village !  
This is the people's very heaven on earth !  
The high, the low, in pleasure all uniting—  
Here may I feel that I too am a man !

WAGNER. Doctor, to steal about with you, 'tis plain  
Is creditable, brings its own great gain.  
But otherwise, I'd never throw away  
My time in such a place. I so detest  
Everything vulgar—hear them ! how they play  
Their creaking fiddles—heark the kettle-drums ;  
And their damned screaming to the ear that comes  
Worse, if 'twere possible, than all the rest.  
They rave like very devils let loose on earth—  
This they call singing !—this, they say, is mirth !

(PEASANTS *dancing and singing*).

The shepherd for the dance is drest  
In ribands, wreath, and flashy vest ;  
Round and round like mad they spin  
To the fiddle's lively din.  
All are dancing full of glee,  
All beneath the linden tree !

'Tis merry and merry—heigh-ho, heigh-ho,  
Blithe goes the fiddle-bow !

Soon he runs to join the rest ;  
Up to a pretty girl he prest ;  
With elbow raised and pointed toe,  
Bent to her with his best bow—  
Pressed her hand : with feigned surprise,  
Up she raised her timid eyes !  
'Tis strange that you should use me so,



So, so—heigh-ho—

'Tis rude of you to use me so.'

All into the set advance,  
Right they dance, and left they dance—  
Gowns and ribands how they fling,  
Flying with the flying ring;  
They grew red, and faint, and warm,  
And rested, sinking, arm in arm.

Slow, slow, heigh-ho,  
Tired in elbow, foot, and toe!

'And do not make so free,' she said;  
'I fear that you may never wed;  
Men are cruel'—and he prest  
The maiden to his beating breast.  
Hark! again, the sounds of glee  
Swelling from the linden tree.

'Tis merry, 'tis merry—heigh-ho, heigh-ho,  
Blithe goes the fiddle-bow!

OLD PEASANT. This, doctor, is so kind of you,  
A man of rank and learning too;  
Who, but yourself, would condescend  
Thus with the poor, the poor man's friend,  
To join our sports? In this brown cheer  
Accept the pledge we tender here,  
A draught of life may it become  
And years on years, oh! may you reach,  
As cheerful as these beads of foam,  
As countless, too, a year for each!

FAUST. Blest be the draught restorative!  
I pledge you—happy may you live!

*[The people collect in a circle round him.]*

OLD PEASANT. Yes! witness thou the poor man's  
glee,  
And share in his festivity:  
In this hath fortune fairly dealt  
With him who, in the evil day



Of the black sickness, with us dwelt,  
When Plague was numbering his prey—  
In strength and health how many gather  
To this day's pastimes, whom thy father  
Rescued from death in that last stage,  
When the disease, tired out at length  
Is followed by the fever's rage,  
And prostrate sinks the vital strength;  
And you, too, in that time of dread  
And death, a young man, visited  
Each house of sickness:—evermore,  
Day after day, the black hearse bore  
Corse after corse—still, day by day,  
The good man held his fearless way  
Unscathed; for God a blessing gave,  
And saved the man who sought to save.

ALL. For thee, tried friend, our prayers we raise,  
And, when we wish thee length of days,  
'Tis for himself that each man prays.

FAUST. In thanks to the Great Father bend,  
We are but servants to extend  
Blessings, that flow from man's one Friend.

*[Goes on with WAGNER.]*

WAGNER. With what a sense of pure delight,  
Master, must thou enjoy the sight  
Of this vast crowd, and the unchecked  
Expression of their deep respect!  
Oh, happy he, who thus to Heaven  
Can render back the talents given!  
The pious father points thee out  
To his young folk—they gaze, and ask,  
And gaze again—and crowd about.  
The blithe musician in his task  
Pauses—the dancers turn to thee,  
And gather into rows to see  
The man they honour passing by—  
And then the gratulating shout—  
And then the caps flung up on high:  
They almost worship thee—almost  
Would bend the knee as to the Host.



FAUST. To yonder rock is but a few steps on—  
After our long walk we may rest us there.

Here oft I've sate to muse ; here all alone  
By vigil, fast, and agonies of prayer  
—In Hope then rich, in Faith unwavering,  
With tears and sighs, here was I wont to pray,  
—And supplicating hands, as though to wring  
From Him in heaven that He the plague would stay.  
To me the praise I hear is mockery.  
Oh ! that you could into my bosom gaze,  
Read written there how little worthy we,  
Father or son, of these poor people's praise.  
My father, a reserved and moody man  
On Nature's holy circles still would pore,  
With honest ardour, after some strange plan  
That pleased his fancy, toiling evermore.  
And he would shut himself in secret cell,  
One or two adepts always at his side,  
Quaint recipes with fire and crucible,  
In this dark kitchen evermore he tried,  
Watching for the great moment's birth that might  
Antagonistic elements unite.  
There in the gentle bath a Lion Red,  
Bold wooer he—was to the Lily wed ;  
And both were, while the furnace-fire raged bright ;  
Hurried in torture on from bed to bed.  
If in the glass were given us to behold  
The Young Queen rise in colours manifold,  
Here was the medicine—the patients died,  
None asked ' Who took it and remained alive ? '  
—Thus in these mountains—in these valleys wide,  
Our cure was than the plague a plague more fierce.  
To thousands have I given the poison—they  
Have withered—they are dead—and I survive  
To hear praise lavished on their murderers.

WAGNER. How can this be so painful ? What can  
men

Do more than in their practice still obey  
The precepts of the science of their day ?



What you have from your father heard was then  
Heard in the docile spirit of belief.

You in your day extend the limit-line  
Of science; in due time your son will take  
His place—and for himself discoveries make  
Greater than thine, perhaps—yet but for thine  
Impossible. If so then, why this grief?

FAUST. Happy who still hath hope to rise above  
This sea of error; strange that we in vain  
Seek knowledge each day needs: the knowledge of  
What never can avail us we attain.

But with such musings let us sadden not  
This sweet hour! see, where, in the sunset, gleam  
The village huts with green trees smiling round  
Each cottage in its own small garden plot.

But the Sun sinks—day dies, and it would seem  
With day the Sun. But still doth he survive,  
Still speeds he on with life-diffusing beam—

Oh, that no wing uplifts me from the ground,  
Nearer and nearer after him to strive!

Then should I the reposing world behold  
Still in this everlasting evening glow.

The hill-tops kindling all—the vales at rest—  
The silver brooklet in its silent flow

To where the yellow splendour of the West  
On the far river lies in trembling gold.

In vain the rugged mountain rears his breast,  
With darkening cliff and cave to bar my way,

Onward in heaven, still onward is my flight,  
And now wide ocean, with each fervid bay,

In sudden brightness breaks upon my sight,  
Till sinking seems at last the god of day.

Then the new instinct wakens, and I breathe  
Heaven still—still drink of his undying light.

Before me day—behind me is the night—

Above me heaven—and the wide wave beneath.

A glorious dream—illusion brief and bright—

For while I yet am dreaming he is gone.

Alas! from its captivity of earth,

The body hath no wing whereon to rise,



And with the winged spirit voyage on :  
 And yet will every one of human birth  
 The feeling in our nature recognize,  
 That for a moment with a sense of wings  
 Uplifts us, bears us onward and away,  
 When high above, in blue space lost, his lay  
 Thrilling the skylark sings.

When over piny headlands, savage steeps,  
 Outspread the eagle sweeps.

And over moorlands, over main,  
 Homeward, homeward strives the crane.

WAGNER. I, too, of reverie oft have had my moods,  
 But impulse such as this they never bring.  
 The eye soon has enough of fields and woods ;  
 I never had a wish for a bird's wing—  
 Far other are the thinking man's delights,  
 From book to book, from leaf to leaf they lead,  
 And bright and cheerful are his winter nights.  
 Life, happy life, warms every limb—Unroll,  
 At such charmed hour, some precious parchment scroll,  
 All heaven descends upon you as you read.

FAUST. You feel but the one impulse now—oh learn  
 Never to know the other ! in my breast  
 Alas ! two souls dwell—all there is unrest ;  
 Each with the other strives for mastery,  
 Each from the other struggles to be free.  
 One to the fleshly joys the coarse earth yields,  
 With clumsy tendrils clings, and one would rise  
 In native power and vindicate the fields,  
 Its own by birthright—its ancestral skies.  
 Oh ! if indeed Spirits be in the air,  
 Moving 'twixt heaven and earth with lordly wings,  
 Come from your golden 'incense-breathing' sphere,  
 Waft me to new and varied life away.  
 Oh ! had I but a magic cloak to bear  
 At will to far-off lands the wanderer,  
 How little would I prize the rich array  
 Of princes, and the purple pomp of kings !

WAGNER. Call not the well-known army. Of dusk  
 air,



A living stream, the middle space they fill,  
 And danger manifold for man prepare,  
 For ever active in the work of ill.  
 From all sides pour they on us—from the north,  
 With piercing fangs, with arrow-pointed tongues,  
 And from the sunrise region speed they forth,  
 In the dry wind to feast upon the lungs.  
 If from the desolate parched wilderness  
 The midday send them out with fervid glow,  
 To heap fresh fire upon the burning brain,  
 A cloudy vapour from the west they flow,  
 Descend in what would seem refreshing rain,  
 Then in fierce torrents down on thee they press,  
 And deluge garden, meadow-field, and plain.  
 Ready for evil with delight they hear,  
 They lurk and listen—gladly they obey  
 Man's invitation—gladly they betray  
 Such summoner—in mischief they rejoice,  
 Ambassadors from heaven itself appear,  
 And utter falsehoods with an angel's voice.  
 But let's away—the air grows chill—the dew  
 Is falling—and the dusk of night has come.  
 Towards night we first have the true feel of home.  
 What keeps you standing there?—Why that intent  
 Stare—why that look of such astonishment?  
 What do you see that fastens thus on you?

FAUST. Do you see that black dog, where through  
 the green blades

Of the soft springing corn, and the old stubble,  
 He runs, just glancing by them for a moment?

WAGNER. I've seen him this while past, but thought  
 not of him

As any way strange.

FAUST. Look at him carefully,

What do you take the brute to be?

WAGNER. Why, nothing

But a poor fool of a poodle, puzzling out  
 His master's track whom I suppose he has lost.

FAUST. Do you observe how in wide serpent circles  
 He courses round us? nearer and yet nearer



Each turn,—and if my eyes do not deceive me,  
Sparkles of fire whirl where his foot hath touched.

WAGNER. I can see nothing more than a black dog ;  
It may be some deception of your eyes.

FAUST. Methinks he draws light magic threads  
around us,  
Hereafter to entangle and ensnare !

WAGNER. In doubt and fear the poodle's leaping  
round us,  
Seeing two strangers in his master's stead.

FAUST. The circle, see, how much more narrow  
'tis,—  
He's very near us !

WAGNER. 'Tis a dog, you see,  
And not a spirit ; see, he snarls at strangers,  
Shies, lies upon his belly, wags his tail,  
As all dogs do.

FAUST. We'll bring him home with us.—  
Come, pretty fellow !

WAGNER. He's a merry dog,—  
If you stand, he stands up and waits for you,—  
Speak to him, and he straight leaps up upon you,  
Leave something after you, no doubt he'll bring it,  
Or plunge into the water for your stick.

FAUST. You're right. I see no traces of the Spirit  
In him—

WAGNER. A dog, well-tutored, learns the art  
To win upon a good man's heart ;—  
Wise men grow fond of them—and see,  
Our friend already follows thee—  
Soon shall we see the happy creature,  
Prime favourite, round the doctor skip :  
With every student for his teacher,  
How can we doubt his scholarship ?

*[They enter the town gate.]*



## FAUST'S STUDY

*Enter FAUST, with the Dog.*

FAUST. The fields we roamed through with delight,  
Are hidden now in the deep night;  
Within us felt the thrilling hour,  
Awakes man's better soul to power:  
Hushed the desires of the wild will,  
And action's stormy breath is still—  
~~Love~~ stirs around us and abroad,  
The love of MAN, the love of GOD.

Rest, poodle, rest—lie down in quiet!  
Why runs he up and down the floor?  
What can it be he looks so shy at,  
Smelling and snuffing at the door?  
Pleasant wert thou in our mountain ramble,  
Didst make us merry with trick and gambol,  
Go to sleep on the cushion—a soft snug nest—  
Take thy ease, in thine inn, like a welcome guest.

When in our narrow cell each night,  
The lone lamp sheds its friendly light,  
Then from the bosom doubt and fear  
Pass off like clouds, and leave it clear—  
Then reason re-assumes her reign,  
And hope begins to bloom again,  
And in the hush of outward strife,  
We seem to hear the streams of life,  
And seek, alas!—in vain essay—  
Its hidden fountain far away.

Cease dog, to growl! the beastly howl of the hound  
But ill accords with the pure breathing of  
Heaven—with the holy tones—all peace and love  
That to the heart unbidden way have found.  
With men 'tis common to contemn,



Whatever is too good, too fair,  
 Too high to be conceived by them,  
 And is 't that like those wretched carles,  
 This dog, at what he understands not, snarls ?

These withering thoughts, do what I will,  
 They come—the fountain of the heart is chill.  
 —How oft have I experienced change like this !  
 Yet is it not unblest in the event ;  
 For, seeking to supply the natural dearth,  
 We learn to prize things loftier than the earth,  
 And the heart seeks support and light from heaven.  
 And such support and light—oh, is it given  
 Anywhere but in the New Testament ?  
 Strong impulse sways me now to look to the text  
 On which all rests, and honestly translate  
 The holy original into mine own  
 Dear native tongue.

*[He opens a volume and prepares to write.]*  
 —'Tis written—'IN THE BEGINNING WAS THE WORD'.—  
 Already at a stand—and how proceed ?  
 Who helps me ? Is the WORD to have such value,  
 Impossible—if by the spirit guided.  
 Once more—'IN THE BEGINNING WAS THE THOUGHT'.—  
 Consider the first line attentively,  
 Lest hurrying on the pen outrun the meaning,  
 Is it *Thought* that works in all, and that makes all ?  
 —It should stand rather thus—'IN THE BEGINNING  
 WAS THE POWER'—yet even as I am writing this  
 A something warns me we cannot rest there.  
 The Spirit aids me—all is clear—and boldly  
 I write, IN THE BEGINNING WAS THE ACT.

—Cease, teasing dog, this angry howl,  
 These moans dissatisfied and dull,—  
 Down, dog, or I must be rougher,  
 Noise like this I cannot suffer,—  
 One of us must leave the closet, if  
 You still keep growling—that is positive ;  
 To use a guest so is not pleasant,  
 But none could bear this whine incessant !



But can what I see be real,  
Or is all some trick ideal ?  
'Tis surely something more than nature,—  
Form is changed, and size, and stature,  
Larger, loftier, erecter,  
This seeming dog must be a spectre ;—  
With fiery eyes, jaws grinding thus,  
Like an hippopotamus,  
—And here to bring this whelp of hell,  
Oh, at last, I know thee well,  
For such half-devilish, hellish spawn,—  
Nought's like the key of SOLOMON.

SPIRITS *without.*

One is in prison :  
Listen to reason :  
Venture not on :  
Where he hath gone  
Follow him none :  
Watch we all ! watch we well !  
The old lynx of hell  
Has fallen in the snare,  
Is trapped unaware,  
Like a fox in the gin ;  
He is in : he is in :  
Stay we without,  
Sweep we about,  
Backward and forward,  
Southward and norward,  
Our colleague assisting,  
His fetters untwisting,  
Lightening their pressure  
By mystical measure ;  
At our motions and voices,  
Our brother rejoices,  
For us hath he offered  
His safety, and suffered ;  
We are his debtors,  
Let's loosen his fetters.



FAUST. To conquer him must I rehearse,  
First that deep mysterious verse,  
Which each elemental spirit,  
Of the orders four, who hear it,  
Trembling, will confess and fear it.

Scorching SALAMANDER, burn,  
NYMPH of WATER, twist and turn,  
Vanish, SYLPH, to thy far home,  
Labour vex thee, drudging GNOME.

He is but a sorry scholar,  
To whom each elemental ruler,  
Their acts and attributes essential,  
And their influence potential,  
And their sympathies auxiliar,  
Are not matters quite familiar;  
Little knows he, little merits  
A dominion over Spirits.

Fiery SALAMANDER, wither  
In the red flame's fiery glow!  
Rushing, as waves rush together,  
WATER-NYMPH, in water flow!  
Gleamy SYLPH OF AIR, glance, fleeter,  
And more bright, than midnight meteor!  
Slave of homely drudgery,  
Lubber INCUBUS, flee, flee  
To the task that waits for thee!  
Spirit, that within the beast  
Art imprisoned, be releast!  
Kingly sway hath SOLOMON  
Over subject spirits won;  
—Forth!—obey the spell and seal  
Elemental natures feel!

By Spirits of a different kind,  
Is the brute possessed, I find;  
Grinning he lies, and mocks the charm  
That has no power to work him harm.

Spectre! by a stronger spell  
Thy obedience I compel—



If thou be a serf of Satan,  
A follower of the fallen great one,  
Deserter from hell,  
I conjure and charm thee,  
By the sign and the spell,  
To which bows the black army.

See how he swells—how the hair bristles there !

Outcast creature, see the sign  
Of the Human and Divine.  
Bow before the Uncreated,  
Whom the world has seen and hated :  
Canst thou read Him ? Canst thou see ?  
Dread to hear me name His name,  
Through all heaven diffused is He,  
Died on earth a death of shame.

Ha ! with terror undissembled,  
Methinks the brute at last has trembled ;  
As behind the stove he lies,  
See him swell and see him pant ;  
And his bristles how they rise  
As he rouses,—and his size  
Large as is the elephant,—  
Larger yet the room he crowds,—  
He will vanish in the clouds,  
—Spare the roof in thy retreat,  
Lie down at the master's feet.  
Thou shalt feel the scorching glow  
(Mine is not an idle threat)  
Of the heat divine—shalt know  
Pangs of fiercer torment yet.  
—Still resisting ?—Tarry not  
For the three-times glowing light,  
Blaze beyond endurance bright—  
Reluctantly must I at length  
Speak the spell of greatest strength.



MEPHISTOPHELES *comes forward, as the mist sinks,  
in the dress of a travelling scholar from behind  
the stove.*

MEPHISTOPHELES. Why all this uproar? Is there  
anything  
In my poor power to serve you?

FAUST. This then was  
The poodle's kernel—travelling scholar—psha!—  
A most strange case of the kind—I cannot but  
Laugh when I think of it.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Most learned master,  
Your humble servant—you've been broiling me  
After a pretty fashion—sweated me  
To the very vengeance. I'm in a fine stew.

FAUST. Your name?

MEPHISTOPHELES. A frivolous inquiry this from  
you—

From one who rates the word so low?  
Who, disregarding outward show,  
Would look into the essence of the being—

FAUST. With you oftentimes the name  
And essence is, I trow, the same,  
The name and nature of the being  
All one—in nothing disagreeing.

Thus, one is called the god of flies—  
One the SEDUCER—one the LIAR.

Now, good, my friend, may I inquire  
Your name?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Part of the power that would  
Still do evil—still does good.

FAUST. What may this riddle mean?

MEPHISTOPHELES. I am the Spirit that evermore  
denies,  
And rightly so—for all that doth arise  
Deserves to perish—this, distinctly seeing—  
No! say I, No! to everything that tries  
To bubble into being.



My proper element is what you name  
Sin, Dissolution,—in a word, the Bad.

FAUST. You call yourself  
A part, yet stand before me whole.

MEPHISTOPHELES. I speak  
The truth—the modest truth—though Man may call  
—Poor fool-world Man—in his aspirings high,  
Himself a Whole—the Whole—I am not—I  
Am part of a part which part at the first was All,  
Part of the Darkness that gave birth to Light;  
Proud Light that now would from her rank displace  
Maternal Night—and wars with her for space,  
Yet is no gainer—for, strive as it will,  
Light clings—imprisoned slave—to Bodies still.  
It streams from Bodies—it makes Bodies bright—  
A body intercepts it in its course;  
This gives the hope that Light may too perforce,  
When Bodies perish be extinguished quite.

FAUST. A creditable line of business this;  
Your Nothing nothing has unmade, I wis.  
The great projector sees his projects fail,  
And would do business on a smaller scale.

MEPHISTOPHELES. And even in this way little do I  
gain,

Against this Nothing the coarse Somewhat will  
Obtrude. The rude World contradicts me still.  
The clumsy lump of filth in proud resistance  
Asserting undeniable existence,  
I have been pounding at it all in vain.  
I have tried deluge, tempest, thunder, and  
Lightnings—at rest you see it still remain  
Inviolable—the self-same sea and land.  
On the damned stuff,—rank spawn of man and beast,  
I can make no impression—not the least.  
What crowds on crowds I've buried—little good—  
It but sets circulating fresh young blood.  
On they go—on, replenishing, renewing,  
It drives me mad to see the work that's doing.  
From water, air, earth, germs of life unfold,  
Thousands in dry and damp, in warm and cold—



Flame still is mine—I've kept that—Flame alone,  
Else were there nothing specially my own.

FAUST. Is it thou?—thou standing there?—thou  
to resist

The healthful energy, the animation,  
The force that moves and moulds, and is creation—  
In vain spite clenching that cold devil's fist?  
Strange son of Chaos this may well move laughter.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Well—this point we may talk  
about hereafter—

But now, with your permission, I would go.

FAUST. That you can, whether I permit or no,  
Why ask me? Now that you have found your way,  
I hope to see you often here. Good day!—

This is the window—that the door—and yonder  
The chimney. Why thus stare about and ponder?

MEPHISTOPHELES. I am not free: a little obstacle,  
I did not see, confines me to your cell,—  
The druid foot upon the threshold traced.

FAUST. The pentagram?—is it not to your taste?  
But, son of hell, if this indeed be so,  
How came you in, I should be glad to know,—  
How was it, that the charm no earlier wrought?

MEPHISTOPHELES. The lines were not as perfect as  
they ought:  
The outer angle's incomplete.

FAUST. Well—'twas a pleasant evening's feat—  
A most unlooked-for accident—  
Strange prize, and yet more strangely sent.

MEPHISTOPHELES. The dog, without perceiving it,  
Leaped in—the devil has somehow  
Seen it—is in the house—and now  
Can find no way of leaving it.

FAUST. Why not the window?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Why?—because  
It is enacted in the laws  
Which bind us devils and phantoms, 'that  
Whatever point we enter at,  
We at the same return':—thus we  
In our first choice are ever free;—



Choose, and the right of choice is o'er,  
We, who were free, are free no more.

FAUST. Hell has its codes of law then—well,  
I will think better now of Hell.

If laws be binding and obeyed,  
Then compacts with you may be made.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Made and fulfilled, too—nowhere  
better—

We keep our compacts to the letter;  
But points of law like this require  
Some time and thought—are apt to tire,  
And I am hurried—we may treat  
On them at leisure when we meet  
Again—but now I ask permission  
To go.

FAUST. One moment—I am wishing  
To question further one who brings  
Good news, and tells such pleasant things.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Let me go now—I come again,  
You may ask any question then.

FAUST. Aye, old fox, aye, come, catch me there—  
I laid no net—I set no snare,  
And if you walked into the trap—  
'Twas your own act, and my good hap;  
Luck like this can hardly last—  
Catch the devil and keep him fast—  
Part with a prize, on which none could have  
reckoned!

~~The first chance gone, pray who will give a second?~~

MEPHISTOPHELES. If you insist on it—I stay;  
And just to while the hours away,  
I would amuse you, as I may;  
For I have pleasant arts and power,  
With shows to while the passing hour.

FAUST. If it be pleasant, try your art—  
As audience I will play my part.

MEPHISTOPHELES. In one hour shall more intense  
Pleasure flow on every sense,  
Than the weary year could give,  
In such life as here you live—



The songs soft spirits sing to thee,  
The images they bring to thee,  
Are no empty exhibition  
Of the skill of a magician ;  
Pictures fair and music's tone,  
Speak to eye and ear alone ;  
But odours sweet around thee sporting  
Lingering tastes thy palate courting,  
Feelings gratified, enraptured,  
All thy senses shall be captured.  
Preparation need not we—  
Spirits, begin your melody.

SPIRITS *sing.*

Vanish, dark arches,  
That over us bend,  
Let the blue sky in beauty  
Look in like a friend.  
Oh, that the black clouds  
Asunder were riven,  
That the small stars were brightening  
All through the wide heaven !  
And look at them smiling  
And sparkling in splendour,  
Suns, but with glory  
More placid and tender ;  
Children of heaven,  
In spiritual beauty,  
Descending, and bending  
With billowy motion,  
Downward are thronging,  
Willing devotion  
Flowing to meet them,  
Loving hearts longing,  
Sighing to greet them.  
O'er field and o'er flower,  
On bank and in bower,  
The folds of their bright robes



In breezy air streaming,  
Where loving ones living  
In love's thoughtful dreaming,  
Their fond hearts are giving  
For ever away.

Bower on bower,  
Tendril and flower ;  
Clustering grapes,  
The vine's purple treasure,  
Have fallen in the wine-vat,  
And bleed in its pressure—  
Foaming and steaming, the new wine is streaming,  
Over agate and amethyst,  
Rolls from its fountain,  
Leaving behind it  
Meadow and mountain,  
And the hill-slopes smile greener, far down where it  
breaks  
Into billowy streamlets, or lingers in lakes.  
And the winged throng, drinking deep of delight  
From the rivers of joy, are pursuing their flight.  
Onward and onward,  
Wings steering sun-ward,  
Where the bright islands, with magical motion,  
Stir with the waves of the stirring ocean.  
Where we hear 'em shout in chorus,  
Or see 'em dance on lawns before us,  
As over land or over waters  
Chance the idle parties scatters.  
Some upon the far hills gleaming,  
Some along the bright lakes streaming,  
Some their forms in air suspending,  
Float in circles never-ending.  
The one spirit of enjoyment,  
Aim, and impulse, and employment ;  
All would breathe in the far distance  
Life, free life of full existence  
With the gracious stars above them,  
Smiling down to say they love them.



MEPHISTOPHELES. He sleeps,—thanks to my little favourites—

Why ye have fairly sung away his wits,  
And so he thought the devil to catch and keep!—  
Well, well, I am a concert in your debt—  
Still cloud with dreams his unsuspecting sleep,  
Antic and wild!—still in illusion steep  
His fancy!—hover round and round him yet,  
Haply dreaming, that I am  
Prisoner of the pentagram!  
—Tooth of rat . . . gets rid of that . . .  
Gnawing, sawing, bit by bit,  
Till there be no trace of it;—  
Little need of conjuring,  
Rats to such a place to bring;  
One is rustling in the wall,  
He will hear my whispered call—

The master of the Mice and Rats,  
Flies and Frogs, and Bugs and Bats,  
Sends his summons to appear;—  
Forth! and gnaw the threshold here;—  
He hath spilt the fragrant oil,  
Till it vanish tooth must toil:—  
—Sir Rat hath heard me—see him run  
To the task that soon is done;  
Yonder angle, 'tis, confines,  
Your master—gnaw the meeting-lines:—  
Now the corner, near the door,  
All is done in one bite more.

The prisoner and the pentagram are gone,  
Dream, FAUST, until we meet again, dream on!

FAUST (*awaking*). Am I again deceived?—and must  
I deem

These gorgeous images, but phantoms shaped  
In the delusion of a lying dream?  
And so there was no devil at all, 'twould seem—  
And it was but a poodle that escaped!



## FAUST'S STUDY

FAUST—MEPHISTOPHELES.

FAUST. A knock!—Come in—who now comes to torment me?

MEPHISTOPHELES. 'Tis I.

FAUST. Come in.

MEPHISTOPHELES. You must command me thrice.

FAUST. Come in, then.

MEPHISTOPHELES. That will do—I'm satisfied—  
We soon shall be the best friends in the world.

*[Enters.]*

From your mind to scatter wholly  
The mists of peevish melancholy,  
Hither come I now, and bear  
Of a young lord the noble air,  
And mask me in his character;  
My dress is splendid, you behold,  
Blazing with the ruddy gold,  
With my stiff silken mantle's pride,  
And the long sword hanging by my side,  
And o'er my cap the cock's proud feather—  
I'm a fine fellow altogether.  
And now, my friend, without delay,  
Equip yourself in like array,  
That, light and free, you thus may see  
Life's many pleasures what they be!

FAUST. In every dress alike I can but feel  
Life the same torture, earth the self-same prison;  
For your light pleasures I am all too old,  
Too young to have the sting of passion dead,  
The world—what can it give? 'Refrain, refrain!'—  
This is the everlasting song—the chime  
Perpetually jingling in all ears,  
And with hoarse accents every hour repeats it.  
Each morn, with a dull sense of something dreadful,



I wake, and from my bitter heart could weep  
 To see another day, which, in its course,  
 Will not fulfil one wish of mine—not one!  
 The teasing crowd of small anxieties,  
 That each day brings, have frittered into dust  
 All joy, until the very hope of joy  
 Is something that the heart has ceased to feel;—  
 And life's poor masquerade—vapid and wayward,  
 And worthless as it is—breaks in upon,  
 And dissipates, the world, which for itself  
 The lonely man's imagination builds;  
 —And, when the night is come, with heavy heart  
 Must I lie down upon my bed, where rest  
 Is never granted me, where wild dreams come,  
 Hideous and scaring. The in-dwelling spirit,  
 Whose temple is my heart, who rules its powers,  
 Can stir the bosom to its lowest depths,  
 But has no power to move external nature;  
 And therefore is existence burdensome,  
 And death desirable, and life detested.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Yet Death's a guest not altogether welcome.

FAUST. Oh, happy he for whom, in victory's hour  
 Of splendour, Death around his temples binds  
 The laurel dyed with blood, and happy he,  
 Whom, after the fast whirl of the mad dance,  
 Death in his true love's arms reposing finds.  
 Would that I too had, in such rapturous trance,  
 My individual being lost in his,  
 Dissolved before that lofty Spirit's might,  
 Past, soul and sense absorbed, away for ever!

MEPHISTOPHELES. And yet that night I've seen a certain man  
 Forbear to taste a certain dark brown liquid!

FAUST. A spy too—peering—prying—is it not so?

MEPHISTOPHELES. I know not ALL, but many things I know.

FAUST. And if from harrowing thoughts the rich old  
 chaunt  
 Did win me; and the old remembered words,



And the old music, like a spell recalling  
 Faded remembrances ;—if in the trance  
 All that remained of my boy's heart was captive  
 To the charmed echo of more happy days—  
 Know I not—feel I not it was illusion ?  
 We are but what the senses make of us,  
 And this and all illusion do I curse,  
 All that beguiles us, man or boy—that winds  
 Over the heart its nets, and chains us here  
 In thralldom down or voluntary trance,  
 This magic jugglery, that fools the soul—  
 These obscure powers that cloud and flatter it !  
 Oh, cursed first of all be the high thoughts  
 That man conceives of his own attributes !  
 And cursed be the shadowy appearances,  
 The false delusive images of things  
 That slave and mock the senses ! cursed be  
 The hypocrite dreams that soothe us when we think  
 Of fame—of deathless and enduring names !  
 Cursed be all that, in self-flattery,  
 We call our own,—wife, child, and slave, and plough ;—  
 Curse upon Mammon, when with luring gold  
 He stirs our souls to hardy deeds, or when  
 He smoothes the couch of indolent repose ;  
 A curse upon the sweet grape's balmy juice,  
 And the passionate joys of love, man's highest joys—  
 And cursed be all hope and all belief ;  
 And cursed, more than all, man's tame endurance.

*Song of invisible SPIRITS.*

Woe, woe ! thou hast destroyed it !  
     This beautiful world :  
 Mighty his hand, who dealt  
     The blow thro' Nature felt.  
     Earth withers :  
     A demigod cursed it—  
 A shock from the Spirit that shaped and enjoyed it ;  
 A blight from the bosom that nursed it ;



The fragments we sweep down Night's desolate steep,  
The fading glitter we mourn and we weep!

Proud and powerful  
Son of earth,  
To second birth,  
Call again the pageant splendid—  
Oh, restore what thou hast rended—  
Be no more the wreck thou art—  
Recommence, with clearer sense,  
And build within thy secret heart;  
Re-create, with better fate,  
Another world on firmer ground,  
And far and near, and all around,  
With songs of joy and triumphing,  
Heaven and the happy earth shall ring.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Listen to the witching lay!

Wise and wily ones be they;  
Little ones of mine, and good  
Children are they—sly and shrewd;  
Childlike are their voices—age  
Never uttered words more sage;  
Active life—the joys of sense  
Counsels all experience,—  
And my little ones do well,  
Courting thee 'mong men to dwell,  
Far from this monastic cell;  
Where passions and young blood together  
In solitude grow dry and wither.  
Oh, listen, and let charms like these  
Thy feelings and thy fancy seize.  
Cease to indulge this misanthropic humour,  
Which like a vulture preys upon thy life;  
The worst society will make thee feel  
That thou, too, art a man, and among men—  
Not that I mean to mix you with the rabble.  
I'm not myself one of the higher orders;  
But if you will in company with me  
See life, I will contrive to manage matters,  
And make arrangements to convenience you,

*old & grown up  
people can not see  
such wise counsel*



Cheerfully—from this moment am your comrade ;  
Or, if you like me, am your servant—nay,  
Your slave.

FAUST. And what must I give in return ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Oh, time enough to think of that  
hereafter.

FAUST. No, no ! the devil is selfish—very selfish—  
Does nothing for God's sake or from good nature :  
Come, out with your conditions, and speak plainly—  
There's little luck, I trow, with such a servant.

MEPHISTOPHELES. I bind myself to be thy servant  
*here,*

To run and rest not, at thy beck and bidding ;  
And when we meet again in yonder place,  
*There,* in like manner, thou shalt be my servant.

FAUST. THAT YONDER PLACE gives me but small  
concern ;

When thou hast first shattered this world to atoms,  
There may be others then, for aught I care.

All joys, that I can feel, from this earth flow,

And this sun shines upon my miseries !

And were I once divorced from them I care not

What may hereafter happen—of these things

I'll hear no more—I do not seek to know

If man, in future life, still hates and loves ;

If in those spheres there be, as well as here,

Like differences of suffering and enjoyment,

Debasement and superiority.

MEPHISTOPHELES. With feelings such as these you  
well may venture.

Make only the engagement, and at once

All will be pleasure—I have rare devices,

And of my craft will show thee many marvels,

Right strange and merry scenes will conjure up :

Sights shalt thou see that man hath never seen.

FAUST. Thou—what hast thou—poor devil ? The  
mind of man,

Man's seeking, struggling spirit—hopes—aspirings

Infinite—are they things to be conceived

By natures such as thou art ? Yet hast thou,



Poor devil, in thy degree a wherewithal  
 To wile and win us; delicatēs unoloying  
 Are—are they not?—among those lures of thine?  
 Yea! hast thou the red gold that restlessly  
 Like quicksilver slides from the hand—a game  
 At which none wins, yet is it play?—a girl  
 That with her lavish arms around my breast,  
 With willing eyes ogles and wooes another.  
 —And splendour hast thou?—rank—wilt give me  
 these?

The starlight meteors of ambition's heav'n?  
 Aye! let me see this pleasant fruit of thine  
 That rots before we gather it—the trees  
 That each day bud and bloom anew.<sup>1</sup>

MEPHISTOPHELES. Fine things to fancy!—to be  
 sure you shall

Have this or any thing you wish to ask for,—  
 Something less spiritual were something better;  
 But by and by we'll find the Doctor's taste  
 Improving,—we'll have our own pleasant places,  
 And our tit-bits—and our snug little parties,  
 And—what will keep the Doctor's spirit quiet;—  
 —I promise you, you'll feel what comfort is.

FAUST. Comfort and quiet!—no, no! none of these  
 For me—I ask them not—I seek them not.

If ever I upon the bed of sloth  
 Lie down and rest, then be the hour, in which  
 I so lie down and rest, my last of life.  
 Canst thou by falsehood or by flattery  
 Delude me into self-complacent smiles,  
 Cheat me into tranquillity? come, then,  
 And welcome life's last day—be this our wager.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Done.

FAUST. Done, say I—clench we at once the bargain.  
 If ever time should flow so calmly on,  
 Soothing my spirits into such oblivion,  
 That in the pleasant trance I would arrest,

<sup>1</sup> The worlde that neweth every daie.

Gower, *Confessio Amantis*.



And hail the happy moment in its course,  
Bidding it linger with me—'Oh, how fair  
Art thou, delicious moment!'—'Happy days,  
Why will ye flee?'—'Fair visions! yet a little  
Abide with me, and bless me—fly not yet,'  
Or words like these—then throw me into fetters—  
Then willingly do I consent to perish;  
Then may the death-bell peal its heavy sounds;  
Then is thy service at an end—and then  
The clock may cease to strike—the hand to move—  
For me be time then passed away for ever!

MEPHISTOPHELES. Think well upon it—we will not forget.

FAUST. Remember, or forget it, as you please;  
I have resolved—and that not rashly: *here*,  
While I remain, I needs must be a slave—  
What matter, therefore, whether thine, or whose?

MEPHISTOPHELES. I'll then, belike, at the DOCTORS'  
Feast to-day

Attend, your humble friend and servitor.  
Just one thing more—as life and death's uncertain,  
I'd wish to have a line or two in writing.

FAUST. And dost thou ask a writing, too, poor  
pedant?

Know you not Man? Man's nature? or Man's word?  
Is it not enough that I have spoken it?

My very life—all that I have and am,

What is it but an echo of my word,

Pledge of the will that gives it utterance?

If words be nothing, what is writing more?

Is the world's course one sea of stormy madness,—

Its thousand streams, in conflict everlasting,

Raving regardlessly? roll they not on?

Must they not roll?—and can it be that I,

In this perpetual movement, shall not move—

Held back, the slave and prisoner of a promise?

Yet in this fancy all believe alike:

If a delusion, all men are deluded—

And is there one that would be undeceived?

Truth and the feeling of integrity



Are of the heart's own essence—should they call  
 For sufferings, none repents the sacrifice.  
 Oh, happy he, whom Truth accompanies  
 In all his walks—from outward cumbrance free—  
 Pure of all soil—dwelling within the heart,  
 Light to his steps and guidance: oracle  
 To lead or to mislead, none doth he seek;  
 Consults no casuist, but an honest conscience;  
 Of sacrifices reckes not, and repents not.  
 But a stamped parchment and a formal deed,  
 With seal and signature, all shrink from this  
 As something that offends and wounds our nature;  
 It robs, methinks, the words of all their life,  
 The letter, and that only binds us now;  
 Such virtue, and no other can it have,  
 As seal and stamp, as wax and parchment give—  
 But why?—why argue for it or against it?—  
 Is writing more than the unwritten word?  
 —What, evil one, what is it you require?  
 Brass? marble? parchment? paper?—do you wish  
 Graver or chisel? or plain pen and ink?—  
 Have which you please—any or all of them.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Why this excitement? why this  
 waste of oratory?

These frantic gestures?—any scrap will do;—  
 Just scratch your name, there, in a drop of blood.

FAUST. A silly farce—but if it gratifies you——

MEPHISTOPHELES. Blood it must be—blood has pe-  
 culiar virtues.

FAUST. Fear not that I will break this covenant:  
 The only impulse now that sways my powers,  
 My sole desire in life, is what I've promised!  
 I've been puffed up with fancies too aspiring,  
 My rank is not more high than thine; I am  
 Degraded and despised by the Great Spirit;  
 Nature is sealed from me; the web of thought  
 Is shattered; burst into a thousand threads;  
 I loathe, and sicken at the name of knowledge.  
 Now in the depths of sensuality  
 To still these burning passions; to be wrapped



In the impenetrable cloak of magic,  
With things miraculous to feast the senses !  
Let's fling ourselves into the stream of time,  
Into the tumbling waves of accident,  
Let pain and pleasure, loathing and enjoyment,  
Mingle and alternate, as it may be ;  
Restlessness is man's best activity.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Nothing whatever is there to restrain you—

If your desires be as you say, to taste  
Of every sweet—sip all things—settle nowhere—  
Catching each moment while upon the wing  
In random motion all that meets the eye,  
Rifling from every flower its bloom and fragrance,  
If any thing will do that is amusing—  
I wish you joy of this new life—come on—  
Set to at once—come—come, no bashful loitering.

FAUST. Hearken. I have not said one word of bliss—  
Henceforth do I devote and yield myself,  
Heart, soul, and life, to rapturous excitement—  
Such dizzy, such intoxicating joy,  
As, when we stand upon a precipice,  
Makes reel the giddy sense and the brain whirl !  
From this day forward am I dedicate  
To the indulgence of tempestuous passion—  
Love agonizing—idolizing hatred—  
Cheering vexation—all that animates  
And is our nature ; and the heart, serenely  
And separated from the toil of knowledge,  
Cured of the fever that so long oppressed it,  
Shall cease to shut itself against the wounds  
Of pain : whate'er is portioned 'mong mankind  
In my own intimate self shall I enjoy,  
With my soul grasp all thoughts most high or deep,  
Heap on my heart all human joys and woes,  
Expand myself until mankind become  
A part, as 'twere, of my identity,  
And they and I at last together perish.

MEPHISTOPHELES. A pretty passion for a man to cherish !



Believe me, who have for some thousand years,  
Day after day, been champing this hard food,  
Bitter bad diet is the same old leaven.

Take a friend's word for it who ought to know,  
Never hath man from cradle to the bier  
Succeeded in digesting the tough dough;  
To man the Universal is not given.

The Whole is only for a God—in light  
He lives—eternal light—Us hath he driven  
Into the Darkness—yours is Day and Night.

FAUST. This daunts not me!

MEPHISTOPHELES. Said boldly and said well!  
To me there seems to be one obstacle;  
*Ars longa, vita brevis*—the old story—  
Take a few lessons more—and then determine.  
Call to your aid some builder up of verses,  
Let his mind wander in the fields of thought,  
Imagining high attributes to heap  
On you—the lion's magnanimity—  
The fleetness of the stag—the fiery blood  
That dances in the hearts of Italy—  
The constancy and firmness of the North—  
Let his invention gift you with the secret,  
With lofty thoughts low cunning to combine—  
To love with all a young heart's ardent impulses,  
Yet following closely some cold plan of reason—  
And thus to reconcile each contrariety.

A pleasant person this Herr Microcosmos,  
I think I've met him somewhere in society.

FAUST. What am I then—if here too all in vain  
The passions and the senses pant and strain,  
If this—the crown of our humanity  
Is placed on heights I never can attain?

MEPHISTOPHELES. You are just what you are—nay  
—never doubt it,

Heap lying curls in millions on your head;  
On socks—a cubit high—plant your proud tread,  
You are just what you are—that's all about it.

FAUST. Alas! in vain poor I together scraped  
All that man's science till this day hath shown;



And all that his imagination shaped,  
I in ambition's dreams have made my own.  
A weary task it was—a sullen strife,  
And now I sit me down, helpless, alone,  
No new power comes—no strength—no spring of life.  
Not by a hair's breadth higher is my height,  
Far—far as ever from the Infinite.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Aye! this is Man's presumptuous  
view—

Mine, less ambitious, is more true—  
Why to these moody fancies give  
The rein? while living, why not live?  
Why, what the mischief! you have got  
Your head—hands—haunch—paunch—and—what not—  
But all that I employ—enjoy—  
Is it less mine? When to my car  
My money yokes six spankers, are  
Their limbs not my limbs? Is't not I  
On the proud race-course that dash by?  
Yes, I it is that sweep along,  
Swift in their speed—in their strength, strong—  
Mine all the forces I combine—  
The four-and-twenty legs are mine—  
Up! up! throw off this cloud of gloom!  
Come! come!—into the world—come! come!—  
Away with dreams—your theorist  
Is—let me tell you—like a beast  
On a dry heath, whom a bad Spirit  
In one dull circle round and round  
Keeps whirling, while on all sides near it  
The bright green pastures everywhere abound.

FAUST. But how begin?

MEPHISTOPHELES. First, must we fly from hence—  
What place of martyrdom is this? what life  
Is this to lead? or can you call it life,  
Wearying yourself and pupils thus for ever?  
Better leave such work to your neighbour Paunch-  
man,

Why stay to plague yourself with threshing straw?  
Afraid, even in a hint, to intimate



Your best acquirements to the boys who crowd  
Your lecture-room ; even now upon the passage  
I hear the foot of one.

FAUST. Impossible ; I cannot see him now.

MEPHISTOPHELES. The poor lad has been waiting a  
long while ;

We should not let him go without some notice ;  
A quarter of an hour will do for him—

Come, Doctor, help me on with your cap and gown,  
Trust to my wits—I rather like the whim—

This masquerade dress becomes me charmingly,  
Meanwhile, you may be getting into trim

Fit for this fashionable trip of ours. [*Exit* FAUST.]

(MEPHISTOPHELES *in* FAUST's long gown.)

Aye, thus continue to contemn  
Reason and knowledge, man's best powers,  
And every hope he can inherit !  
Still speak despisingly of them,  
Heart-hardened by an evil spirit ;  
Soul and senses in confusion,  
Mocked by magical delusion ;  
Still indulge derision vain.  
Mine thou art, and must remain !

His is an eager, restless mind,  
That presses forward unconfined  
And, in the anticipation  
Of a brisk imagination,  
Ever active, still outmeasures  
The slow steps of earthly pleasures :  
Him, through the world's wild vanity,  
Its wearisome inanity,  
Will I hurry forward, thus  
Breaking his impetuous  
And fiery temper—he will sprawl,  
And start, and stand—then stick and fall—  
Meats and wines unsatisfying  
Shall before his lips be flying—



The withered spirit seeks in vain  
Health and refreshment to obtain—  
What need of seal and signature  
In blood, such spirit to secure ?

STUDENT *enters*.

STUDENT. I am but just arrived—your name  
My chief attraction ; and I came  
At once,—forgive my strong desire  
To see and speak to him, whose fame  
Has spread so far—whom all admire.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Fame has been most obliging,  
then :

You see a man like other men—  
Did you seek farther, you might meet  
Abler instructors.

STUDENT. I entreat  
Your care and counsel—with a guide  
Where could I better be supplied ?  
I come with heart and spirits free,  
And youth—and the professor's fee.  
My mother scarce would let me come ;  
But I love learning more than home—  
Have for improvement travelled far——

MEPHISTOPHELES. And in the best place for it are,

STUDENT. And yet, if I the truth may say,  
I would I were again away :  
Walls like these, and halls like these,  
Will, I fear, in no wise please !  
The narrow gloom of this cold room,  
Where nothing green is ever seen ;  
No lawn—no tree—no floweret's bloom—  
'Mong benches, books, my heart is sinking,  
And my wasted senses shrinking—  
I mourn the hour that I came hither ;  
Ear and eye, and heart will die,  
Thought, and the power of thought, will wither.

MEPHISTOPHELES. This is all custom : as at first  
Unwillingly the young child sips



The breast ; but soon, with eager thirst,  
 And pressure of delighted lips,  
 Clings to the mother's heart, that gives  
 The living food on which he lives ;  
 Thus thou, each day more deeply blest,  
 Wilt drink from Wisdom's nursing breast.

STUDENT. Oh, to my heart shall she be strained  
 With love !—but how is she obtained ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. First, let me beg, that you will  
 mention

What line of life is your intention ?

STUDENT. Oh, I long ardently to know  
 Whatever man may learn below,  
 All that we contemplate on earth,  
 And all that in the heaven hath birth,  
 To roam through learning's wondrous maze,  
 And comprehend all nature's ways.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Right ; but by prudence still be  
 guided,  
 Guard most, that thought and mind be not  
 Much dissipated and divided.

STUDENT. With soul and strength will I apply,  
 But now and then could seize with pleasure  
 A few short hours of idle leisure.  
 A little thoughtless liberty ;  
 A pleasant summer holiday,  
 When skies are bright, and fields are gay.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Make good use of your time, for  
 fast

Time flies, and is for ever past ;  
 To make time for yourself begin  
 By order—method—discipline ;  
 For this I counsel my young friend  
 A course of logic to attend ;  
 Thus will your mind, well-trained, and high,  
 In Spanish boots stalk pompously !  
 With solemn look, and crippled pace,  
 The beaten road of thought will trace :  
 Nor here and there, through paths oblique,  
 In devious wanderings idly strike ;



For days and days you then are taught,  
That, in what hitherto had gone,  
Like eating, and like drinking, on,  
One, Two, and Three, the guide must be  
In this which seemed till now so free.

But, as the weaver's work is wrought,  
Even so is formed the web of thought;  
One movement leads a thousand threads,

Unseen they move, as now above  
The shuttle darts, now darts below;  
One beat combines a thousand twines,  
And not unlike would seem the flow  
Of mind, when Nature thinks in us.

But now in steps *Philosophus*,  
To prove it could not but be thus.

*'The first was so—the second so—  
Then must the third and fourth be so—  
And if the premises be hollow,  
That the conclusion will not follow.'*

The language this of all the schools

*The Art of Weaving taught by rules*

That men profound and boys believe!

—Do they teach any one to weave?

Here he, who seeks to learn, or gives

Descriptions of, a thing that lives,

Begins with 'murdering, to dissect',

The lifeless parts he may inspect—

The limbs are there beneath his knife,

And all—but that which gave them life!

Alas! the spirit hath withdrawn,

That which informed the mass is gone—

They scrutinize it, when it ceases

To be itself, and count its pieces—

Finger and feel them, and call this

Experiment—analysis.

Is what we handle then the whole?

Is there no animating soul?

In nature is there nothing meant?

No law, no language of intent?

Oh! could your chemist, in whose hand



The fragments are, but understand  
The terms he uses! '*Encheiresis  
Naturae*'—for the phrase expresses  
With scorn, that it seems strange should be  
In words thus accidentally,  
How less than nothing can avail  
These tricks of dabbling and detail.

STUDENT. I cannot wholly comprehend your meaning.

MEPHISTOPHELES. No matter—next time you'll get better on—

When you have learned to arrange, and classify,  
And body all you hear in syllogisms.

STUDENT. My brain is stupefied—I feel  
As if, within my head, a wheel  
Was whirling round with ceaseless reel.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Next—most important thing of all—

With zeal to metaphysics fall.  
There, see—or think that you see—plain,  
What—does not pass within the brain.  
Our faculties are too confined  
To guide us here—the human mind  
Fails—and we are and must be blind.  
Thoughts are or are not in the head,—  
Use serviceable words instead;  
But first be sure the next half-year  
At every lecture to appear—  
Five hours each day for lecturing—  
Be there the moment the bells ring.  
Be sure beforehand to prepare,  
Have read the syllabus with care;  
Have every paragraph well conned,  
Watch, lest the teacher go beyond  
The matter written in his book;  
Then as you write his dictates, look  
That you take down *verbatim* all  
And every sentence he lets fall,  
As if each sentence scripture were,  
That comes from the professor's chair.



STUDENT. This, sir, you need not tell me twice—  
I feel how useful the advice ;  
What one has thus in black and white,  
He can take home with him at night.

MEPHISTOPHELES. But what profession is your  
choice ?

STUDENT. Law shall not ever have my voice.

MEPHISTOPHELES. In this, I own, you show discern-  
ing :

I know, and do not love, this learning.  
Laws everywhere are like the taint  
Of an inherited complaint,  
The curse of an infected race :  
Their downward progress you may trace,  
From land to land, through blighted nations,  
Afflicting distant generations—  
Reason made nonsense, good intent,  
In lapse of time warped from its true sense,  
Things for the common welfare meant,  
Becoming thus a common nuisance.  
Unhappy, that it was thy fate  
To have been born an age too late.  
The laws for thy great grandsire made  
Are laws to thee—must be obeyed—  
Must be obeyed, and why ? Because,  
Bad though they be, they are the laws ;  
But of the rights by nature taught,  
And born with man, they take no thought.

STUDENT. You deepen my abhorrence for  
That, which I did before abhor—  
I wish to learn Theology.

MEPHISTOPHELES. I fear to lead you wrong—and I  
Speak here with more of hesitation.  
It is a dangerous vocation,  
This same Theology : its ways  
Are such a tangled serpent maze—  
Such poison everywhere disguised—  
And everywhere as medicine prized—  
That which is which, or why 'tis so,  
Few can conjecture—none can know.



The best thing that the case affords  
Is—stick to some one doctor's words :  
Maintain his doctrines out and out,  
Admit no qualifying doubt ;  
But stick to words at any rate,  
Their magic bids the temple gate  
Of Certainty fly safely ope—

Words, words alone, are your best hope.

STUDENT. But in each word must be a thought——

MEPHISTOPHELES. There is, or we may so assume,—  
Not always found, nor always sought,  
While words—mere words, supply its room.  
Words answer well, when men enlist 'em,  
In building up a favourite system ;  
With words men dogmatize, deceive ;  
With words dispute, on words believe ;  
And be the meaning much or little,  
The Word can lose nor jot nor tittle.

STUDENT. Pardon—I feel my questions tease  
you.

Just for a moment more—one word  
On Medicine, so please you.  
With but three years for it, it were absurd  
For one like me, without a guide,  
To enter on a course so wide ;  
And your experience may suggest,  
In such a field, what path is best.

MEPHISTOPHELES (*aside*). I'm sick of this pedantic  
tone,

Too long assumed. Now for my own !

(*Aloud.*) The trade of medicine's easiest of all :  
'Tis but to study all things—everywhere—  
Nature and man—the great world and the small—  
Then leave them at haphazard still to fare.  
It is, you see, plainly impossible  
That one man should be skilled in every science—  
Who learns the little that he can, does well :  
The secret of the art is self-reliance.  
A man can learn but what he can ;  
Who hits the moment is the man.



—You are well made—have common sense,  
 And do not want for impudence.  
 Be fearless—others will confide no less,  
 When you are confident of your success—  
 The only obstacle is indecision ;  
 But, above all, win to yourself the women—  
 They have their thousand weaknesses and aches,  
 And the one cure for them is the Physician.  
 A due consideration for the sex  
 Will teach the value of decorous seeming :  
 Let but appearances be unsuspecting,  
 And they are everything their doctor wishes.  
 The title ' Doctor ' is essential,  
 Our university credential,  
 That, as in one approved and tried,  
 They may undoubtingly confide.  
 Then in the very earliest stage  
 Of new acquaintanceship you lead them,  
 Enjoying every privilege  
 Of tête-à-tête familiar freedom ;  
 Although the young physician's eyes  
 Exhibit half, and half disguise  
 Something, like tenderness, the while  
 Mingling with the habitual guile  
 Of the sly acquiescent smile :  
 Then may you feel the taper wrist,  
 Nor will there one of them resist  
 The hand professionally prest  
 —Permitted boldness—on her breast,  
 Or round her waist the free arm thrown,  
 To feel how much too tight her zone.

STUDENT. This seems more feasible—one sees  
 Something like reason in all this—  
 Winning the household through the wife.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Theory, friend, is old and grey,  
 And green the golden tree of life !

STUDENT. Is this reality ?—so like a dream  
 All seems ! May I, upon some future day,  
 Resume my visit ?—learn the grounds and root  
 Of these your doctrines ?



MEPHISTOPHELES.

Come when it may suit.

STUDENT. One favour more—deem not your guest  
Intrusive—grant me this request—  
Just in my album write a line.

MEPHISTOPHELES. With pleasure.

[Writes, and returns the Book.

STUDENT (*reads*). *Eritis sicut Deus, scientes bonum  
et malum.* [Shuts it respectfully, and exit.

MEPHISTOPHELES. If the wily proverb guide thee,  
and my cousin the sly snake,

A weary man thy likeness to the gods will of thee make!

FAUST (*enters*). Where go we now?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Oh! wheresoe'er you please;—  
See all that's to be seen in common life,  
And then, so please you, visit the gay world,  
Dancing and revelling scot-free, and careless  
Who pays the piper.

FAUST. What, with my long beard?  
How shall I trim it into decent shape?  
And I want ease of manners, and the knowledge  
Of life—why, the experiment must fail!  
I cannot—never could at any time—  
Be what society requires: I am  
Abashed in company—shall every moment  
Be at a loss!

MEPHISTOPHELES. My good friend, have no fear  
On this score—be but self-possessed—that is  
The only art of life.

FAUST. How do you mean  
To travel?—where are servants? horses? carriage?

MEPHISTOPHELES. We only spread this mantle out,  
and it  
Wafts us through air in this our daring journey.  
Bring out with you no loads of heavy baggage:  
A little gas, which I will soon have ready,  
Will lift us high above the earth;—light laden,  
We will move fast, and soon be far away!  
Welcome, my friend, to the new life before you—  
A pleasant change. I wish you joy of it!



## AUERBACH'S CELLAR IN LEIPZIG

## SET OF MERRY COMPANIONS.

FROSCH. Is no one laughing?—no one drinking?  
Come, come, a truce to sober thinking!  
Hang these long faces—come, be sprightly!  
What, you that used to blaze so brightly!  
All dull and damp—smoking together  
Like dunghill straw in rainy weather?

BRANDER. 'Tis your fault that we are not jolly—  
Have you no beastliness, no folly  
To treat us to to-night?

FROSCH (*throws a glass of wine over BRANDER'S head*).  
Have both.

BRANDER. Brute that you are! Were I not loath—

FROSCH. You got but what you asked me for.

SIEBEL. Come, come, we'll have no civil war—  
We'll have no difference of opinion  
In this our absolute dominion.

Whoever quarrels, kick him out—  
Now raise the chorus round about—  
Lift every voice, and swill, and shout—

With holla—holla—ho!

ALTMAYER. Help! help! I am lost—bring me cot-  
ton! the cheers

Will split open my skull, and play hell with my ears.

SIEBEL. When the arches ring again,  
We feel the bass in full power then.

FROSCH. Right, right, say I, with all my heart;  
If any one in evil part  
Takes anything, that here is done,  
Why, kick him out, the bitch's son.

ALTMAYER.

A tara—lara—da.

FROSCH. All throats are tuned.

(Sings.)

*The holy Romish empire now,  
How does it hold together?*



BRANDER. A nasty song—psha!—a political song  
 A most offensive song. Thank God each day,  
 Rising from bed, that you have nought to say  
 With governing this Romish empire; I  
 Greatly rejoice and bless my stars therefore,  
 I am not Emperor or Chancellor;  
 Still I see no sufficient reason why  
 We should not have a ruler;—I propose  
 That we elect a Pope—what qualification  
 Should mark a candidate for consecration,  
 All of ye know.

FROSCH (*sings*). *Greet her, Lady Nightingale,  
 Greet my love ten thousand times.*

SIEBEL. Love-meetings and greetings—let us not  
 hear of them.

FROSCH. Love-greetings and meetings—who can  
 keep clear of them?

(*Sings.*)

Undo the door in stilly night—  
 Open latch—thy love keeps watch;  
 For thy sake—is he awake,  
 Shut-to the door at morning's light.

SIEBEL. Yes! sing, sing on—a little while sing on!  
 Sing her sweet praises!—I will laugh anon.  
 Me she deceived, and thee she is deceiving,  
 Devil that she is—whom there is no believing—  
 Has played the same tricks with each man that sought  
 her—

I wish some goblin of the forest caught her  
 On a cross-road—or that, from the witch-dances  
 On Blocksberg, trotting home, an old buck-goat,  
 With his long-bearded chin and meg-a-geg throat,  
 Made up to her—'tis some such brute she fancies;  
 A young fellow of proper flesh and blood,  
 To be thus thrown away were far too good;  
 From me no serenading should she gain,  
 Other than dashing in each window-pane.

BRANDER (*striking on the table*). Silence there—silence  
 —all attend to me—



Gentlemen, I know life, and how to live ;  
And, as some of us seem in love to be,  
A song for love-sick people will I give.  
Your merry singer is the best physician  
For a poor devil in such sad condition.  
Here all of you attend—come, cease your chattering—  
And listen to a song of the first pattern—  
And all join in the chorus :—

(Sings.)

Once in a cellar lived a rat,  
Whose paunch each day grew smother ;  
He dined on butter, supped on fat,  
And looked like Doctor Luther.  
The cook put poison in his way,  
And when our poor rat tasted it,  
He felt a cramping in his heart,  
As fierce as if Love wasted it.

*As fierce as if Love wasted it.*

And he ran round, and out he ran,  
And looking for a cure, he  
Drank at each puddle, gnawed, and scratched,  
And raved in perfect fury.  
In pain he fell—in pain he sprang,  
The cook with pleasure gazed at it ;  
Poor creature felt at heart a pang,  
As fierce as if Love wasted it.

*As fierce as if Love wasted it.*

And torture drove him at noon-day  
To run into the kitchen ;  
He fell down on the hearth, and lay  
Convulsing there and screeching.  
Loud laughed the cook to see him sprawl—  
In death, and feel she hasted it :  
Ha ! ha ! quoth she, your heart is gone,  
As sure as if Love wasted it.

*As sure as if Love wasted it.*



SIEBEL. How the heavy logs enjoy it,  
As if a rat had nothing good,  
And 'twere a virtue to destroy it.

BRANDER. The rats, it seems, are special favourites ;  
Creatures of gentle generous blood,  
And hold high place in your good graces.

ALTMAYER. Old baldpate, with the paunch there,—  
how his wits  
Are gone !—to him the rat's case his own case is—  
With food too good for it the belly swollen,  
Then the poor thing in death convulsions rolling—  
No wonder it should jar and strike  
Upon his nerves—it is too like.

MEPHISTOPHELES and FAUST enter.

MEPHISTOPHELES (*in conversation with FAUST*).—And  
first I feel anxiety,  
To show you our 'Society  
Of merry fellows' ;—free and gay,  
Regular rioters are they,  
And their whole life is holiday ;  
The requisites for happiness  
Are few, are—what these men possess :  
With lively spirits—self-conceit—  
And little, very little wit—  
'Tis the same life, the whole year round,  
The self-same set together found ;—  
Each night, their songs—their drink—their game—  
Their mirth—their very jests the same ;  
And as its tail diverts a kitten,  
So they with their own jokes are smitten :  
They ask no more than thus to sup—  
Without a head-ache to get up—  
And while the host will credit give  
Are satisfied—and thus they live !

BRANDER. They're travellers off a journey, you may  
see it  
In their odd manners—are not here an hour.



FROSCH. You're right, quite right ! Leipzig, say I,  
for ever !

Leipzig 's a little Paris in itself :  
You'd know our Leipzig people anywhere.  
Their manners are so finished.

SIEBEL. But these strangers,  
What think you, are they ?

FROSCH. Only wait a moment—  
In the twinkle of a bumper I will tell you—  
I'll worm it out of them as easily  
As draw an infant's tooth : let me alone  
For managing them : I guess that they belong  
To the nobility, they look so haughty,  
So distant,—you would almost say—displeased.

BRANDER. They are mountebanks, I'll lay you any  
wager.

ALTMAYER. Probably.

FROSCH. See if I don't screw it out.

MEPHISTOPHELES (*to FAUST*). Always the same, they  
never scent the devil,  
Even when he has them by the nape of the neck.

FAUST. Your servant, gentleman—

SIEBEL. Thanks, sir, and yours—

(*Looking at MEPHISTOPHELES ; in a low tone.*)  
The fellow limps a little on one foot.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Will you permit us to sit down  
with you,  
And for good wine, which cannot be had here,  
Give us the pleasure of good company ?

ALTMAYER. You seem a most fastidious gentle-  
man.

FROSCH. You are lately come from Rippach, are you  
not, sirs ?—

Have been at supper with old Hans to-night ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. To-day we did not stop ;—last  
time we spoke to him

He told us some good stories of his cousins—  
And sent his compliments to each of you.

ALTMAYER. A home-thrust that—the fellow 's not to  
be done.



SIEBEL. He knows the world, and how to make out life.

FROSCH. Wait, wait, until—I'll have him before long.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Was I deceived, for just as we came in

We heard, or thought we heard, a merry chorus  
Of practised voices?—what a rich effect  
Music must have along this vaulted roof.

FROSCH. You are a virtuoso then—

MEPHISTOPHELES. Oh, no!

My skill is next to none—but I love music.

ALTMAYER. Give us a song—

MEPHISTOPHELES. A hundred, if you please.

SIEBEL. Something original—something brand-new.

MEPHISTOPHELES. We're just returned from Spain,  
romantic Spain,  
The land of wine and song.

*(Sings.)*

Once on a time there was a king,  
A lovely queen had he—  
But dearer far than queen or son,  
He loved a big black flea.

FROSCH. A flea! is it possible I heard him right?  
A flea! oh, what a guest to grace a palace!

Once on a time, there was a king,  
A lovely queen had he—  
But dearer far than queen or son,  
He loved a big black flea!  
He called the royal tailor,  
Who measures him, and stitches  
A coat for the young favourite,  
And a little pair of breeches.

BRANDER. Forget not, sire, to charge the tailor  
strictly  
That they be well and fashionably made—



And as he sets a value on his head,  
That he shall leave no seam, or plait, or wrinkle !

MEPHISTOPHELES.

Of silk and satin were the clothes  
Our young lord looked so fine in—  
He sported ribands—and a cross  
Upon his breast was shining !  
Soon Minister, he wore a star,  
Lived splendidly and gaily,  
His poor relations all got place,  
And thronged the palace daily.

And Queen and Maid got bites and stings,  
And were afraid to scratch 'em ;  
They cursed the flea and all his kin,  
But did not dare to catch 'em !  
But we, if we get sting or bite,  
None hinders us to scratch 'em ;  
And if the fleas be troublesome,  
We kill them when we catch 'em.

CHORUS.—*And if, &c.*

FROSCH. Bravo ! bravo ! that was excellent.

SIEBEL. We'll catch and play the devil with the fleas.

BRANDER. With pointed nail and finger, pressed together.

ALTMAYER. Freedom and Wine for ever !—Wine and Freedom !

MEPHISTOPHELES. Willingly would I drink long life to Freedom ;

But that your wines are execrably bad.

SIEBEL. You must not venture to say this again !

MEPHISTOPHELES. Only I fear to vex our worthy host,

I'd give you something better from our cellars.

SIEBEL. Out with it then. I'll take the blame on me.

FROSCH. Pour out a bumper if you wish to please us—



None of your sample thimblefuls for me—  
When I try wine, I like a deep long draught—  
That is the only way to judge of it.

ALTMAYER (*in a low voice*). I've strong suspicions  
they are from the Rhine.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Bring me a gimlet.

BRANDER. What to do with it?—

You cannot have your wine-casks at the door.

ALTMAYER. Behind, there, is the landlord's chest of  
tools.

MEPHISTOPHELES (*taking up the gimlet*). Now say  
what wine you wish.

FROSCH. What do you mean?

Have you so many?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Each may choose his favourite.

ALTMAYER (*to FROSCH*). Ha! you begin to lick your  
lips already.

FROSCH. Well then, if I may choose, I'll take the  
Rhenish:

The best gifts we receive are from our country.

MEPHISTOPHELES (*boring a hole in the edge of the table  
opposite FROSCH's seat*). Now get a little wax—  
and make some stoppers.

ALTMAYER. 'Tis plain that they are jugglers.

MEPHISTOPHELES (*to BRANDER*). Sir, your choice?

BRANDER. I'll have Champagne—sparkling Cham-  
pagne for me!

[MEPHISTOPHELES bores again; one of the party  
has in the mean time prepared the wax stoppers  
and stopped the gimlet holes.]

BRANDER. One cannot always do without the  
Foreigner—

But give him to me in the shape of wine.

A true-born German hates with all his heart

A Frenchman—but their wines are excellent.

SIEBEL (*as MEPHISTOPHELES approaches his seat*). I'd  
have you know I hate all acid wines—

Give me a glass of genuine sweet!

MEPHISTOPHELES.

Tokay

Then let it be.



ALTMAYER. No, gentlemen, this won't do!  
Now look me straight in the face, old mountebank:  
I see you but bamboozle us!—

MEPHISTOPHELES.

Yes! yes!

A very likely story—to play tricks  
On noble guests like you! now fast—make ready—  
Out with the word—pray, sir, what wine shall I give  
you?—

ALTMAYER. Any and all! whatever I can get.

*(After all the holes are bored and stopped, MEPHISTOPHELES, with strange gestures.)*

Grapes are of the vine-branch born;  
The buck-goat's is a branch of horn  
Wine is sap—and grapes are wood,  
The wooden board yields wine as good.  
All is clear to him that seeth—  
Lift the veil and look beneath,  
It is but a deeper glance  
Under Nature's countenance—  
Now behold—your prophet saith—  
Miracles—if you have faith.  
Every man draw up his stopper,  
And drink such wine as he thinks proper.

ALL *(as they draw the stoppers, and the wine each has  
chosen runs into his glass).*

Flow on, bright rill—flow on and fill  
Our hearts with joy—flow on at will!

MEPHISTOPHELES. Drink—but be cautious how you  
spill:

There's danger if a drop but falls.

*[They drink repeatedly.]*

ALL *(sing).*

That we will—that we will!—

Happy as the cannibals:

Like five hundred swine we swill.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Look at them, they're the happiest  
of men.



FAUST. Take me away—I'll not come here again.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Wait till you see them in their glory :

We'll soon have fun !

SIEBEL (*drinking carelessly, spills some of the wine, which turns to flame*). Help, help ! fire, fire !—Hell fire !

MEPHISTOPHELES. Down, friendly Element ! — be still, I say—

—This time 'twas but a drop of purgatory !

SIEBEL. What means the fellow ? Damn him—he shall pay

Dearly for this : you'd think he did not know us.

FROSCH (*to MEPHISTOPHELES*). Better take care no tricks like this to show us.

ALTMAYER. The sooner we get rid of him the better—There's nothing to be had from such a debtor.

SIEBEL. You, sir, are guilty of strange impropriety ; Playing your mountebank pranks in such society.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Silence, old wine-tub !

SIEBEL. Broomstick ! one would think He might rest satisfied with these feats of his, Without being impudent into the bargain.

BRANDER. Be silent, and thankful that we do not flog you !

ALTMAYER (*draws a stopper out of the table ; fire flies out*). I'm burnt—I'm burning !

SIEBEL. Kill him—kill the scoundrel ! He's a magician !—Kill him ! he's fair game !

[*They draw their knives and attack MEPHISTOPHELES.*

(MEPHISTOPHELES *with solemn gestures*).

Wandering voices mock the ear !

Forms, that phantoms are, appear !

Be ye far away, and near !

Be ye there ! and be ye here !

[*They stand gazing on each other in amazement.*

ALTMAYER. Where am I ?—in what lovely land ?

FROSCH. What a show of vineyards near !

SIEBEL. Clustering grapes invite the hand.



BRANDER. See them through the green leaves here—  
Ripe and heavy—look at them ;—  
Oh ! what grapes and such a stem !

*[He seizes SIEBEL by the nose. The others do the same one with the other, and are raising their knives.]*

MEPHISTOPHELES *(as from above)*.

Clouds of Error pass away !  
See ye how the Devil can play !  
Let each startled reveller  
See who plays the Devil here.

*[Vanishes with FAUST. The fellows start back from one another.]*

SIEBEL. What's this ?

ALTMAYER. How's this ?

FROSCH. Is this your nose ?

BRANDER *(to SIEBEL)*. And yours, on which my fingers close ?

ALTMAYER. I feel the shock through every limb ;  
A chair !—I faint !—my eyes grow dim !

FROSCH. What is the matter with you all ?

SIEBEL. Where is he ? what's become of him ?  
If I can catch him, how I shall—

ALTMAYER. Catch him, indeed ! 'tis easy trying  
To deal with such—I saw him flying  
Out of the cellar on a cask—  
You may as well give up the task :  
Heavy as lead these feet of mine  
Are grown.—*(Turning towards the table.)* We've lost  
our well of wine.

SIEBEL. All was deception—trick—design !

FROSCH. Yet, what I drank, I thought was wine !

BRANDER. The ripe grapes too—did they deceive ?  
—Who after this can but believe ?



## WITCH'S KITCHEN

*On a low hearth a large cauldron is on the fire—in the thick smoke are discovered several strange figures. A FEMALE CAT-APE (little long-tailed monkey) is sitting beside the cauldron, to skim it, and take care it does not boil over. THE MALE CAT-APE, with the young ones, sits near, warming himself ;—fantastic articles of furniture, suitable to the place, seen hanging from the walls, &c.*

FAUST and MEPHISTOPHELES.

FAUST. This senseless witchcraft sickens and disgusts me—

And, sayest thou that I shall recruit life's powers,  
Here, in this loathsome den of filthy madness ?—  
Shall I petition an old hag for counsel ?

And can the nauseous puddle of that pot  
Make me a younger man by thirty winters ?  
There's little hope if thou hast nothing better—  
My expectation is already gone !

—Is there in Nature no restorative  
But this ? Has Spirit never yet devised  
Means different to restore the spring of life ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Now do I recognize my friend's  
good sense ;—

Yes ! there are also natural means, by which  
Life's bloom and vigour may again be given ;  
But in a different book this lesson lies,  
And it forms an odd chapter.

FAUST. I will learn it.

MEPHISTOPHELES. There is a means, and it requires  
not gold,

Magic, or medicine ;—away with you  
Into the fields—begin to hew and delve—  
Confine yourself, and limit every wish  
Within a narrow circle—feed upon



Meats, simple, undisguised—and live, in short,  
Beast-like, 'mong beasts—deem it no degradation  
Thyself to spread the dung upon the field,  
The growth of which thou art to reap—this is  
Indeed the best way to repair life's powers,  
And wear at eighty a hale countenance.

FAUST. This cannot be—I am not used to it—  
Nor can I learn to take up now the spade—  
Such narrow life would never do for me.

MEPHISTOPHELES. We must recur then to the witch.

FAUST. Why so ?  
—What's the particular use of an old hag  
In the matter ? Can't you cook the draught yourself ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. That were a pretty waste of time  
—why, man,  
A thousand bridges might be built, before  
'Tis done—it asks not skill and science only,  
But patience must brood over it—the spirit  
In silence must remain for years fermenting ;  
Time, and time only, clears and strengthens it,—  
All things belonging to it are mysterious—  
Its powers and its ingredients wonderful—  
True—'twas the devil that first invented it,  
But yet the devil can't make it—look—look, yonder—  
What a handsome crew they are—both maid and  
man.—

(*To the APES.*) It seems the mistress is from home.

THE APES. Gone from home—to the rout,  
Through the chimney she went out ;  
Gone to carouse  
On the chimney stone on the top of the house !

MEPHISTOPHELES. Will she stay  
Long away ?

APES. 'Twixt the time she comes and goes,  
We can scarcely warm our toes.

MEPHISTOPHELES. What think you of these dear  
young creatures ?

FAUST. All makes me sick—voice, form, and fea-  
tures !

MEPHISTOPHELES. Well, I must own, I greatly relish



The graces which their style embellish.

[To the APES.

Tell me, execrable baby,  
What the mess you mingle may be—  
And the lumps, my pretty jewel!  
That are floating in the gruel.

APES. A beggar's dish—we boil and stew it.

MEPHISTOPHELES. And most men, without knowing,  
chew it.

OLD APE (*fawning upon* MEPHISTOPHELES). Throw  
the dice—begin, begin—

I am poor, so let me win—  
Me to win, and you to lose,  
Is the way that I would choose—  
Money's all in all;—the witch  
Is made honest, if made rich.  
Give me gold, and by that rule,  
Who will say I am a fool?

MEPHISTOPHELES. As the Ape talks of gold, see his  
lips growing watery,  
I wish we could get him a share in the Lottery.

THE OLD APE (*while the young CAT-APES are playing and  
rolling round a large bowl*).

Such is the world!  
So is it twirled,  
Now rolling onward,  
Now rolling downward,  
Ceaselessly, restlessly,  
Still does it spin;  
Like glass it is brittle,  
And broken by little,  
Glimmering, shimmering,  
Hollow within—  
Living am I—  
Stop, my dear son,  
Thy sporting have done,  
Think thou must die!  
All is clay,  
And must crumble away!



MEPHISTOPHELES. What's the purpose of the sieve ?

APE. If a man comes here to thief,  
With this eye-glass thus we view him ;  
Raise it thus, and thus look through him.

*[Runs to the FEMALE, and makes her look through it at MEPHISTOPHELES.]*

Through the sieve look there—look straight—  
Read his features—read his fate.

Answer, if thou art not deaf—

Dost thou know him—the old thief ?

Dost thou dread, from fear or shame,

To name him by his proper name ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. And what's the meaning of the  
pot ?

APE.

How silly a sot,  
To ask what's what ;  
The fool knows not  
The use of the pot—  
The use of the kettle—

MEPHISTOPHELES. Unmannerly wittol,  
Be quiet a little.

APE. Be brisk—take the whisk,—and sit down on  
the settle. *[Forces MEPHISTOPHELES to sit down.]*

FAUST *(who has been all this time before a glass, now approaching, and now standing off from it).*

What is this that I see—how heavenly fair  
The form that shines in this enchanted glass !  
Oh ! lend me, Love, thy swift and silent wings,  
That I may fly away to where she is !  
Near me she seems, yet hopelessly removed,  
And living in another atmosphere !  
Alas ! if from this spot I do but stir,  
If I but venture to approach more near,  
There seems a dusky cloud to gather o'er her ;—  
Image of woman, beyond woman fair,  
Oh ! beautiful transcendently—has Earth  
Charms such as this—in that reclining form,  
Say rather that all charms of many heavens



United are.—Can this indeed be woman ?  
Can this, indeed, be a created being ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Fine cause of wonderment !—  
after seven days  
Of work, if he who made this pretty world,  
And who admired his workmanship, made something,  
Worth looking at ! Aye, gaze on her in rapture—  
This, by the way, is one of these same treasures  
That I am pretty safe in promising :  
Blessed the man who brings the fair bride home !

[FAUST continues looking into the glass—MEPHISTOPHELES, lolling on the settle, and with the whisk in his hand, continues speaking.

Here on my kingly throne I sit me down,  
With sceptre too—I only want a crown.

THE APES (*who have been playing all kind of fantastic gambols, bring MEPHISTOPHELES a crown with loud acclamations*).

Monarch proud—  
With sweat and blood  
Smear it—wear it—

[*They handle the crown awkwardly, and break it in two pieces, with which they go dancing about.*

'Tis done—'twas to be ;  
We speak and we see—  
We hearken—we listen—  
We rhyme and we reason.

FAUST (*still before the glass*). Alas ! I feel my senses leaving me.

MEPHISTOPHELES. And stranger still, even my head's growing giddy !

APES. We have words, and we can link  
Syllables that chime and chink ;  
Sense unsought—thus is caught ;—  
Every jingle is a thought—  
Every word with meaning fraught—  
Language, glib and random, thus  
Does the work of thought for us ;



Let but your own fancy mingle  
 With the jargon and the jingle,  
 As you listen to the lays ;  
 Bring the meaning you are gleaning,  
 Give the poet all the praise.

FAUST (*as before*). My heart's on fire—let us depart.

MEPHISTOPHELES. This is the true poetic art—  
 And I have never met with prettier poets,  
 Could they but keep the secrets of their trade.

*[The cauldron, which the Female CAT-APE has forgotten to attend to, begins to boil over—a great blaze arises, and streams up the chimney.—THE WITCH comes down through the flame with horrid screams.*

THE WITCH. Ou ! Ou ! Ou ! Ou !  
 Damned beast ! cursed sow !—  
 The pot has boiled over—the broth's overturned,  
 The liquor is lost, and the Mistress is burned !

Damned beast—

And what is this ?

*[Seeing FAUST and MEPHISTOPHELES.*

And who are ye ?

What brings ye here ?

Who sent ye here ?

May fiery pain

Burn bone and brain !

*[Dips the skimming ladle in the cauldron, and sprinkles the flames at FAUST, MEPHISTOPHELES, and the CAT-APES—the APES whine.*

MEPHISTOPHELES (*flourishes the fan, and breaks pots and glasses*). Broken, broken !

Hell-broth splashing,

Glasses crashing,

Payment for the words you've spoken !

*cat* It is all in sport, my honey !

Nothing but a frolic funny !

Keeping time, old carrion odious,

Fitly with thy voice melodious !

*[THE WITCH steps back with rage and astonishment.*



Knowest thou no more than that o' me,  
 Thou raw-boned old Anatomy!  
 Skeleton! the devil blast her!  
 —Know you not your Lord and Master?  
 Shall I dash the old deceiver's  
 Bones into a thousand shivers?  
 Smash her, and cats, and crocks together?  
 —Know ye not my vest's red leather?  
 Know ye not the cock-tail feather?  
 What mask is there upon my features,  
 To hide me thus from my own creatures?  
 And am I called upon to mention  
 My name, my rank, and my pretension?

THE WITCH. Pardon, my Lord, this rough salute:  
 I do not see the cloven foot,—

And where are your two ravens?—Where——

MEPHISTOPHELES. Enough, old fool,—for once I  
 spare;—

'Tis long since we have met, and strange  
 Has been, in such a time, the change—  
 The world's grown wise—in every movement  
 Is seen the Spirit of Improvement;  
 Reform to everything extended—  
 Among the rest the devil is mended;  
 For court has left his wildernesses,  
 Thrown off his ancient savage dresses;  
 The curling tail and talons horrid,  
 And horns to guard the wrinkled forehead.  
 All gone—the northern phantom's vanished,  
 By modern education banished!  
 —As to the foot—against my will,  
 I bear that witness with me still;  
 'Twould injure me in the good graces  
 Of some who figure in high places;  
 So, what I can, I do to hide it,  
 And for the purpose, am provided  
 With padded calves—and thus am able  
 To limp no more than's fashionable—  
 Many young men, that I might mention,  
 Avail themselves of the invention.



THE WITCH. Satan again—my own old boy,  
Once more with me!—I'll die with joy.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Woman, that name—I beg to be  
excused—

Call me not so again.

THE WITCH. And why? and wherefore? what the  
mischief ails

The good old name?

MEPHISTOPHELES. It has been too much used,  
And sounds like something in the fairy tales;  
Is so familiar, that men deem it fable;  
Men believe nothing now above the level  
Of every-day experience—they are able  
To disprove all things;—don't believe a letter  
That speaks of me,—are they for this the better?  
—Devils that they are, they don't believe a devil!  
Call me Lord Baron—no one can object  
To that, or some such title of respect.  
I am a cavalier, as good  
As any—am of ancient blood;  
Look at my scutcheon, all who doubt it—  
See here—I never go without it.

*[Struts about with pompous gestures.]*

THE WITCH (*laughing immoderately*). Ha! ha!—this  
is so like you—is so clever—

You're, after all, the same gay rascal ever!

MEPHISTOPHELES (*to FAUST*). This, everyday's ex-  
perience teaches,

Is the true way to deal with witches.

THE WITCH. What, gentlemen, would you desire  
To drink?

MEPHISTOPHELES. I thank you—we require  
A bumper—one will be enough—  
Of—you know well the right old stuff.  
Give us the oldest you have here.

(*To FAUST*). Its strength is doubled every year!

THE WITCH. Most willingly—you need not ask  
A second time—here is a flask,  
I taste myself, now and again—  
You'll not find any smell remain.



Here—take a dram—but if I give it  
To him—you know he can't outlive it  
An hour, unless some charm protect  
His life from the assured effect.

MEPHISTOPHELES. He is a friend, 'twill do him good—  
Thrives like yourself on witches' food—  
There's nothing you can give that is  
Too strong for such a stomach as his.  
Come—chalk your circle—chant your charm—  
Fill high the cup, 'twill do no harm.

[THE WITCH, with extraordinary gestures, describes  
a circle, and places strange things within it.  
Meantime the glasses begin to chime and ring ;  
the caldron to sound and make music. Lastly,  
she brings a great book, places the CAT-APES  
within the circle ; one is made to serve her for  
a reading-desk, others hold torches. She signs  
to FAUST to approach.

FAUST (to MEPHISTOPHELES). No, no ! I'm sick of  
the whole scene !

What good is it ? what can it mean ?  
These raving gestures ? and this rapid  
Torrent of nonsense ? filthy—vapid  
And loathsome cheat.—I've seen such stuff  
Before ; and hated it enough !

MEPHISTOPHELES. 'Tis pure professional farce—mere  
fudge—

You should not be so hard a judge !  
She is but acting the physician ;  
This hocus-pocus exhibition *magically deception*  
Assists the cure—makes the draught operate  
With good effect, and at the proper rate.

[She makes FAUST enter the circle.

THE WITCH (with a strong emphasis, begins to declaim  
from the book).

Understand me let all men !  
Of One make Ten,  
Let Two go then :  
Bid Three



Now be  
 The square of Three:  
 Thus the Witch  
 Makes you rich;  
 Drop Four  
 From your score:  
 From Five and Six  
 You should fix  
 To take Seven and Eight away,  
 Then all is clear as day.  
 And Nine is One,  
 And Ten is None,  
 This is the Witch's One-times-one.

FAUST. She seems in earnest, old deceiver!  
 —How like the ravings of a fever!

MEPHISTOPHELES. There is an endless volume of this stuff—

I ought to know it—I've lost time enough  
 Puzzling it out—for downright contradiction  
 Is, to the wise and fools, an equal mystery.  
 My friend, in the old almanack of history,  
 You'll find such jumbles made of fact and fiction;  
 And by the help of this, or some such juggle,  
 Errors spread wide;—truth suffers in the struggle.  
 Doctrines are lisped by infants; taught in schools,  
 And are believed: for who contends with fools?  
 To customary words men still will link  
 Their faith—poor dolts—imagining they think!

THE WITCH. The height, the might,  
 Of wisdom's light,

The knowledge from the wide world hidden,  
 Cheers humblest minds:  
 Who seeks not finds:

The welcome guest is the unbidden.

FAUST. This nonsense, so like meaning, splits  
 My skull. I soon would lose my wits:  
 Methinks, a million fools in choir  
 Are raving and will never tire.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Enough! enough! incomparable sibyl!



Hand us the drink—fill the cup to the brim—  
 No thimblefuls for us—no niggard dribble—  
 Fear not—such draught will never injure him,  
 He is one of us, and of the highest grade :  
 Has drunk deep before now—be not afraid !

[THE WITCH, *with many ceremonies, pours the drink into a cup : as FAUST raises it to his mouth, a light flame rises.*

Off with it fast—why should you fear it ?  
 —Once down, 'twill warm your heart and cheer it.  
 How 's this ? *my friend*, and much the same  
 As one of us—afraid of flame ?

[THE WITCH *dissolves the circle.* FAUST *steps out.*  
 MEPHISTOPHELES (*to FAUST*). Now ! out at once !  
 you must not rest !

THE WITCH (*to FAUST*). Much good may it do !  
 (*Aside.*) I hope the best !

MEPHISTOPHELES (*to THE WITCH*). If I can serve you,  
 sure you might  
 Command me, on Walpurgis night.

THE WITCH. Here is a song—a pretty glee.  
 Hum it a few times,—you will see  
 Some merit in it, and effect  
 More than you would at first expect.

MEPHISTOPHELES (*to FAUST*). Come, quick ! be for  
 the present guided !

This draught will do you good, provided  
 It gets fair play ; but it requires  
 Brisk motion till the frame perspires,  
 And its full force is felt to dart  
 At once through each and every part.  
 And then, not sooner, will I teach  
 What joys the lazy hand can reach,  
 Of indolent voluptuousness.  
 The pleasures that our nobles bless ;—  
 Soon in thy cheery heart, I trow,  
 Will Cupid rock him to and fro.  
 Already the young urchin lurks  
 Within, and in the spirit works.

FAUST. Once more !—one other look into the glass !—



Fair form—too fair more than a form to be!

MEPHISTOPHELES. Come! come! no form the beauties can surpass,

That soon in living woman thou shalt see!

(*Aside.*) With this draught in him he will meet  
A Helena in every street!

### THE STREET

FAUST (*to MARGARET passing on*). Fair lady, may  
I offer you my arm;

And will you suffer me to see you home?

MARGARET. I am no lady—and I am not fair.  
I want no guide to show me the way home.

[*Disengages herself, and exit.*]

FAUST. By Heaven, she is a lovely child;

A fairer never met my eye,

Modest she seems, and good and mild,

Though something pert was her reply—  
The red lips bright—the cheek's soft light—  
My youth hath not departed quite!

She passed, her timid eyes declining,  
Deep in my heart they still are shining—

And her light spirits' lively play  
Hath stolen me from myself away!

MEPHISTOPHELES *enters*.

FAUST. Hearken here, sir, get me the girl; and fast.

MEPHISTOPHELES. The girl!—what girl?—

FAUST. She that this moment passed.

MEPHISTOPHELES. What—she? she was but now at  
church

At her confession—I was there.

And, hid by the confession chair,  
Was listening to her from my lurch.  
Poor thing—she is all innocence—



Had nothing in the world to tell !  
With such to meddle is not well.  
Her purity is a defence,  
That leaves the tempter no pretence.  
Upon this child I have no power.

FAUST. She's past fourteen, if she's an hour !

MEPHISTOPHELES. Could Liederlich be worse than this ?

The profligate, whose folly is,  
To think each flower of beauty his.  
Calls it a purchasable trifle,  
And every charm he sees would rifle ;  
Thinks truth and honour but a name—  
My friend, give up this hopeless game.

FAUST. Sound doctrine this, most reverend,  
I hope your sermon's at an end :  
Now, once for all, conceited fellow,  
I am determined on't, and tell you,  
She must, this very night, be mine :  
You and I part, if you decline.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Compose yourself—be reason-  
able—

If in a fortnight I be able  
To make out opportunities !

FAUST. A fortnight ! give me but seven hours !  
I want no devil to help me then,  
And ask no aid from any powers  
But those belonging to all men,  
To fool a child like this with ease,  
And make her anything I please.

MEPHISTOPHELES. How like a Frenchman ! I  
regret

To see you discontented ; yet  
Why thus impatient ? the delight  
Is, after all, less exquisite,  
Than when with some delay and doubt,  
And difficulty fenced about,  
You win the treasure guarded long ;  
Play with the pretty thing awhile,  
And toy and trifle and beguile,



And to your will the soft wax mould,—  
As witness many a story told,  
Of true love in Italian song.

FAUST. But, fortunately, I require  
No such incentives to desire.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Now, not to take or give offence,  
Believe me, here all violence  
Is useless—in a little while  
The damsel may be won by guile ;—  
A stratagem, perhaps, may gain  
The fortress—storming it were vain !

FAUST. Give me, meanwhile, some little thing  
Of hers—a garter or a ring—  
A kerchief from her snowy breast—  
Show me the chamber of her rest !

MEPHISTOPHELES. To prove how sensibly I feel  
Your pangs, and, if I could, to heal ;  
I gratify, without delay,  
Your wish, and take you there to-day.

FAUST. And shall I see her ? have her ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. No !

She to a neighbour's has to go,  
And when I find that she is gone,  
You may indulge yourself alone ;  
Breathe in the very room where she  
Hath slept, and dream of joys to be.

FAUST. May we go now ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. It scarce were pleasant  
So early.

FAUST. Make me out some present.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Presents so soon ! this promises  
Speedy success—they all love dress !  
Oh, I know many a place of pleasure,  
Where such things are, and many a treasure  
Buried of old, and soon will find  
Some lure to win the young thing's mind.



## EVENING

## A NEAT LITTLE ROOM.

MARGARET. I would give something now to know  
 The gentleman who met me, though ;  
 He had a proud and princely air,  
 Is one of the nobility ;  
 Look on his brow, you read it there,  
 And if he were not, he would stare  
 With somewhat more civility. [Exit.

MEPHISTOPHELES *and* FAUST.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Come in—tread softly—but come  
 in.

FAUST (*after a pause*). Leave me, now leave me,  
 I entreat.

MEPHISTOPHELES (*prying about*). The place is tidy  
 and quite clean ;  
 —Not every damsel's is so neat.

FAUST (*looking round*). How calm ! how happy [Exit.  
 dwells the tender light  
 In this still sanctuary reposing here,  
 And the sweet spirit of peace pervading all,  
 And blessing all.—Spirit of peace and love,  
 I give myself to thee ! Oh, love, whose breath  
 Is fed on the delicious dew of hope,  
 Be thou henceforth my life !

How round us breathe

In everything the same prevailing quiet  
 And neatness, and the feeling of contentment !  
 —In low estate what more than riches are,  
 And this poor cell how very, very happy !  
 [He throws himself on the leathern arm-chair beside  
 the bed.



Receive me, thou who hast with open arm,  
Year after year, the generations gone  
Welcomed in joy and grief: how many a swarm  
Of children round this patriarchal throne  
Gathering have clung—perhaps beside this seat  
A happy child—I well can fancy it—  
Even now she scarce is more—on Christmas eve  
My love has bent her at her grandsire's feet;  
'Mong the good children each year to receive  
The gifts that heaven's dear child comes down to give.  
Kissing the good old man I see her stand,  
Her young round cheeks pressed on his withered hand.

The spirit of contentment, maiden dear,  
Is breathing in thy very atmosphere;  
I feel it sway me while I linger here.  
The sense of neatness, felt in everything,  
Speaks with a mother's voice, and bids thee spread  
The little table with its covering,  
The floor with crisp sand crackling to the tread.  
Everywhere round the hand beloved I trace,  
That makes a paradise of any place.

Here could I linger hours on hours,  
Where dreams and meditative thought,  
And, nature, thy benignant powers  
Within her virgin bosom wrought,  
As day by day each influence pure,  
Of heaven and earth her heart mature,  
And fain would welcome forth, and win  
To light, the angel from within.

Here lay the slumbering child, her tender breast  
Filled with the warmth of happy life; and here  
The heavenly image, on the soul imprest,  
Came out, as clouds past off, divinely clear.

And thou? what brings thee hither now?  
In this mad moment what art thou?  
These softenings of the heart! and then  
This rage of wild desire again!



Poor Faust ! has some magic cloud  
 Befooled thine eyes ? thy reason bowed ?  
 Else why this burning passion strange ?  
 And why to love this sudden change ?  
 Are we the sport of every breath of air ?

And, should she now return and meet  
 Thee here, how would the boaster shrink  
 Into the coward ! at her feet  
 In what confusion sink !

MEPHISTOPHELES (*entering*). Away—I see her at the door.

FAUST. I go, and I return no more.

MEPHISTOPHELES. This casket, with its jewels rare,  
 I got it—but no matter where—  
 Or—what was to be given instead,—  
 Some things are better left unsaid ;—  
 Quick—put it in the press—'twill seize on  
 Her fancy—lull asleep her reason ;  
 Then, guess you, how the dream will end.  
 I got them for another friend :  
 The casket and the trifles in it  
 He thought might buy a happy minute ;  
 And he was one who knew the fashion  
 In which to woo, and woman's passion ;  
 But child is child, and maid and lover  
 Play the same game the wide world over.

FAUST. I know not ; ought I ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Can you ask it ?  
 Perhaps you wish to keep the casket ;  
 If so—and that 'tis avarice—  
 I wish you joy of this cheap vice ;  
 I'm glad the momentary bubble  
 Of love has burst—it saves me trouble ;  
 And easier pastimes you may find  
 Than practising upon her mind.  
 My poor brain scarcely understands  
 What you are at—I rub my hands  
 And scratch my head.

[*Places the casket in the press, and closes the lock.*]



Come—come—what do you mean ? the object is  
To wind this sweet young child to your wish and will.  
And now—as I live—you're looking starched and  
chill,

As if you were going up to your lecture-chair  
With PHYSICS in the body standing there,  
And METAPHYSICA in her grey hair.

Come ! come !

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter MARGARET (with a lamp).*

MARGARET. It feels so close, so sultry here.  
Yet out of doors I thought it chill.  
—When will my mother come ? A thrill  
Runs through my frame—I am, I fear,  
A foolish, foolish woman.

[*She begins to sing as she undresses herself.*]

There was a king in Thulé,  
And he loved an humble maid ;  
And she who loved him truly,  
When she came to her death-bed,

A golden cup she gave him,  
Which none could better prize ;  
And ever, as he drank of it,  
Tears dimmed his flowing eyes.

And when he came to die,  
To his heirs his wealth he told ;  
Left all without a sigh  
But his mistress' cup of gold.

As at the royal banquet  
Among his knights sate he,  
In the high hall of his fathers,  
In their fortress o'er the sea,

Up stood the gay old monarch ;  
For the last time up he stood ;  
For the last time drained the blessed cup,  
And threw it in the flood.



He saw it falling, filling,  
 And sinking in the sea ;  
 His eyes lost sight of it, and sank,  
 And never more drank he.

*[She opens the press to put in her clothes, and perceives the casket.]*

How came this brilliant casket here ?  
 I locked the press, I'd almost swear.  
 The cover's beautiful—I wonder  
 What it may be that lies under ?  
 Some pledge for money by my mother  
 Lent to somebody or other.  
 I think I'll open it—and, see,  
 Attached to it, and tempting me,  
 A riband with a little key.  
 How very beautiful it is !  
 I've never seen the like of this !  
 Jewels and pearls !—At mask or ball  
 'Twould grace the proudest dame of all  
 Who glitter at high festival.  
 I wonder how 'twould look on me ?  
 Whose can the glorious splendour be ?

*[She puts them on, and stands before the glass.]*

Oh, if I had these ear-rings only !  
 Drest thus, I seem a different creature !  
 What good are charms of form and feature  
     Though poor maids are  
     Both mild and fair,  
 The world for ever leaves them lonely—  
     Man may praise,  
     Yet half he says  
 Seems less like kindness than compassion—  
     For gold he strives,  
     For gold he wives—  
 Alas ! the poor are not in fashion !



## PROMENADE

FAUST *walking up and down in thought—to him*  
MEPHISTOPHELES.

MEPHISTOPHELES. By Love, which I contemn, and  
Hell's  
Essence of fire—things can't be worse :  
Oh, that I could be something else  
Than what I am, that I might curse !

FAUST. What ails thee now ? What pinches thee  
so sore ?  
A face like that I never saw before.

MEPHISTOPHELES. I'd damn myself to everlasting  
evil,  
But that I am myself the devil.

FAUST. This frantic scene—what can it mean ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Think, only think, that splendid  
set

Of pearls, I got for Margaret,  
A priest has made his own of them.  
Her mother, soon as she detected  
The treasure, something wrong suspected.  
The old hag o'er her book of prayer  
Sits moping, mumbling, grumbling there,  
Or, for she has a fine sharp nose,  
Through the house prowling, prying goes,  
On the scent to ascertain,  
For the smell decides right well  
What is holy, what profane,  
She snuffed at the chain and gem,  
Found not the smell she likes in them.  
'My child,' she said, 'things thus unholy,  
Or suited not for one so lowly,  
Will seize and fasten on the heart,  
And hold it till health, peace, depart.  
To the Virgin Mary bring  
These in humble offering ;—



Sinful things of earth we give,  
 And receive from Heaven, instead,  
 Heaven's own food restorative,  
 That our precious souls may live  
 Fed on manna—angels' bread !'  
 At this poor Madge looked far from pleasant,  
 Provoked at having lost the present :  
 Why, thought she, is the gift rejected ?  
 Or he, who gave it me, suspected ?  
 The giver is a rich man—must  
 Be generous—and therefore just  
 And good—and why should we distrust ?  
 The mother straight sends for the priest ;  
 He comes, and he enjoys the jest.  
 His features brighten up with rapture,  
 And thus he preaches o'er his capture :—  
 ' You feel the matter right, dear madam ;  
 These pearls—'twere wrong the poor child had 'em :  
 To them who strive is grace accorded,  
 And he who conquers is rewarded.  
 The Church will feel (we cannot question)  
 No difficulty of digestion ;  
 Will swallow without fear of surfeit  
 The ill-got goods that sin makes forfeit ;  
 Whole realms, their produce and their profit,  
 She eats up, and thinks nothing of it :  
 The Church alone, with conscious quiet,  
 Can thrive upon this doubtful diet.'

FAUST. That this is false each day evinces,  
 Or true as well of Jews and princes.

MEPHISTOPHELES. On this, he swept into his pocket  
 Ear-rings and bracelet, chain and locket,  
 And made no more of pearls and casket,  
 Than if he pocketed a basket  
 Of nuts,—then treats them with a lecture  
 On vanity,—states his conjecture  
 Upon the uses of affliction,  
 And leaves them with his benediction.

FAUST. And Margaret——

MEPHISTOPHELES. Sits in restless mood—



Does nothing—knows not what she should—  
Thinks night and day on what she lost,  
But dwells on him who gave them most.

FAUST. Poor thing! her grief goes to my heart!  
Bring more gems—come—come—no delay—  
The first, coarse common things were they.

MEPHISTOPHELES (*in affected vexation*). Mere trinkets  
flung in sport away!

—My toil is nothing, nor the value  
Of what I give!—

FAUST. Be silent—shall you  
Thus mock at me and my affection?  
Act for my ends, by my direction.  
Court thou the widow—tax invention  
For sweet things—draw off her attention—  
Come—come—you're dull as water-gruel,—  
Up—up—away for chain and jewel!

MEPHISTOPHELES. My lord, I cheerfully obey.

[FAUST *exit*.

How a man fooled with love will fling away  
Sun, stars, earth, heaven, upon the chosen lady—  
All cheap as presents to a child on May-day!

[*Exit*.

## THE NEIGHBOUR'S HOUSE

MARTHA (*alone*). God help and pity me, and pardon  
My poor old man! he treats me badly;—  
Thus to go off—'tis very hard on  
A wedded wife,—here pining sadly  
Am I upon my lonely straw.  
I loved and doted on him so,  
His very will to me was law;  
And for no reason thus to go  
And die abroad (*weeping*)—he must have died—  
Yet 'twould be satisfactory  
If I could have it certified.



*Enter MARGARET.*

MARGARET. Martha.

MARTHA. My little Margery !  
Sweet child, what can the matter be ?

MARGARET. My knees are sinking under me.  
I've found another casket, one  
Like that so lately had and gone,  
Laid in my press—of ebony—  
The rings and jewels in it are  
More brilliant than the former far.

MARTHA. Your mother must not hear it, though,  
Or straightway to the priest they go.

MARGARET. Look at them, only look at them.

MARTHA. Fortunate girl.

MARGARET. Alas, one gem  
I cannot—can I ?—ever dare  
Put on in church or anywhere.

MARTHA. Come here as often as you please,  
And try them on where no one sees :  
Before the glass be whole hours spent  
Adjusting every ornament.  
We will enjoy their full effect,  
With none your secret to suspect ;  
Then as occasions come, a ball,  
A dance, a day of festival,  
We let them one by one appear—  
A chain, a pearl-drop in the ear—  
And coin some story or another  
To keep the matter from your mother.

MARGARET. Twice to have had such caskets brought,  
There's something in it more than ought !

*[A knock.]*

Good God ! my mother ! I'll be seen.

MARTHA. 'Tis a strange gentleman.—Come in.

MEPHISTOPHELES (*enters*). I've come unceremoniously ;  
But, ladies, you will pardon me.

*[Retreats respectfully before MARGARET.]*



To Martha Schwerdtlein was my visit :

I'm told this is her lodging. Is it ?

MARTHA. Sir, I'm the person. What's your pleasure ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. I'll call when you are more at leisure :

You have a guest of consequence ;

I'll call again in three hours hence.

MARTHA (*to MARGARET*). The funniest thing I ever knew—

The gentleman imagined you

To be some lady of high rank.

I can't but laugh.

MARGARET. I have to thank

The gentleman's extreme good nature.

I am a poor young humble creature :

These ornaments are not my own.

MEPHISTOPHELES. I did not judge by them alone ;

'Tis something in your mien and glance.

My visit was a lucky chance.

MARTHA (*aside*). To know what brings him, I am dying.

MEPHISTOPHELES. I wish I had news more gratifying ;

But blame me not, though sad it prove.

Your husband's dead, and sends his love.

MARTHA. Is dead ! the faithful creature dead !

My husband—would 'twere I instead.

MARGARET. Friend, let thy strong good sense prevail  
O'er grief—

MEPHISTOPHELES. And hear the sad detail.

MARGARET. I fear at all to think of love,

Such loss my certain death would prove.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Grief waits on joy—joy follows  
grief.

MARTHA. Tell on ; it will be some relief.

MEPHISTOPHELES. In Padua, at St. Anthony's,

In consecrated earth he lies !

A cool bed under the church floor,

Where he sleeps soundly.

MARTHA.

Nothing more ?



MEPHISTOPHELES. Oh, yes! a death-bed legacy :  
His last commission was to thee,  
To have three hundred masses said,  
With requiem service for the dead.  
His last was a religious thought :  
This is the whole of what I brought.

MARTHA. What, not a coin, no trinket token,  
Nothing to soothe his poor heart-broken ?  
Why, the most paltry artisan,  
The veriest wretch in form of man,  
Some small memorial still will hoard,  
Some little pledge in secret stored,  
To show his love is not forgot—  
Will starve—will beg—but parts it not !

MEPHISTOPHELES. Madam, I'm sorry for his blind-  
ness  
To the true value of your kindness :  
'Tis your mistake, to think he squandered  
His money—as he died, he pondered  
The past—and, as his heart relented,  
His sins and his bad luck repented.

MARGARET. Unhappy men ! I weep for them !  
He shall not want my requiem !

MEPHISTOPHELES. The sweet child ! what a tender  
touch of  
True feeling ! that's the girl for me—  
I take it you deserve to be  
Out of hand married, and made much of.

MARGARET. Time long enough 'twill be till then.

MEPHISTOPHELES. You'll find admirers 'mong the  
men :

A husband in due course, no doubt,  
I'll see to bring it soon about,  
And if not married out and out,  
With a gallant we can mayhap  
Fill up as pleasantly the gap.

MARGARET. 'Tis not the custom of the place.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Custom or not, it is the case.

MARTHA. Tell on.

MEPHISTOPHELES. I stood at his bedside ;



The rotting straw on which he died,  
—Something less foul than dung, not much,  
Infectious to the smell and touch.—

He died a Christian, and in debt,  
Settled his scores with Heaven;—the trifle  
Due at the wine-shop, is due yet.

'Alas,' said he, 'I used my wife ill.—

Would die at peace, did she forgive.'

MARTHA. Poor man! I long ago forgave.

MEPHISTOPHELES. 'But 'twas her folly, as I live!'

MARTHA. What! standing on the very grave  
Did he say this? assert this lie?  
And did he tell you it was I,  
I who was wrong?—

MEPHISTOPHELES. He did: but out  
The truth has come, and leaves no doubt.  
He lied: your very countenance  
Decides the matter at a glance!—

'Mine was hard work, you may conjecture  
(Thus ran his peevish death-bed lecture),  
First, all her children to be fed;  
And while I toiled to make them bread,  
Not let to eat my crust in peace.'

MARTHA. What, will his slanders never cease?  
Love, Honour, Truth, forgotten quite;  
Our tendernesses day and night.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Not so: he thought of you with  
great affection.

'As I,' said he, 'was late from Malta sailing,  
I found myself in prayer; a sudden rapture,  
Following a burst of tender recollection  
Of wife and children, and the prayer prevailing  
Was heard on high. That day we made a capture;  
A Turkish vessel laden with rich treasure  
For the great sultan: 'twas a gallant fight,  
And valour triumphed, and was well rewarded:  
And when they came the shares of each to measure,  
I got, to say the least of it, my right.'

MARTHA. What? how? a prize? think you, he  
buried it?



MEPHISTOPHELES. Who knows where heaven's four winds have scattered it ?

Bury it ?—no, his heart was far from sordid :  
That his death proves, his generous nature hurried it.  
A lady, one of your nice Neapolitans,  
As he was loitering in their pleasant city,  
Looked on his loneliness, kind soul, with pity,  
And saw his vanity—and soothed and flattered it—  
Fastened upon him, led him such a jolly dance,  
That with his cash, and him, all was soon over.  
Marks of affection, too, she gave her lover,  
Of such a kind, that to the blessed hour  
In which your poor saint died, he felt their power.

MARTHA. Scoundrel, to use his wife and children so !  
Ought not the poverty, which his neglect  
Had heaped on us, his shameless course have checked ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. It ought ; and he is punished for it now :

But as this will not mend the case,  
I would, if I were in your place,  
Put on my mourning, keep a good eye out,  
And wed again, when the year came about.

MARTHA. Where could I find, in this wide world of men,  
Anything like my own poor man again ?  
There could not be a creature kinder, fonder ;  
His only fault was, he from home would wander ;  
And when I think of him, my eyes are swimming :  
He was so good, without a single vice,  
Except his taste for foreign wines and women,  
And the society they bring—and dice.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Well ! if on his side he had only made

Allowances as just and generous,  
Your quarrels had been easily allayed.  
Why, I myself—if you indulge me thus—  
With such good sense—in a few little things—  
Am tempted to propose exchanging rings.

MARTHA. Oh, Sir, you are a pleasant gentleman :—  
Sure you were speaking but in jest.



MEPHISTOPHELES (*aside*). I'd best be off: this vile  
old pest

Has her brains turned already with the plan  
Of marrying me at once outright!

My only safety is in flight.

Damn her! she'll keep the devil to his word.

[*To MARGARET.*]

How goes it with your heart?

MARGARET.

What means my lord?

MEPHISTOPHELES (*as if to himself*).—The good sweet  
innocent child!

(*Aloud.*) Ladies, farewell!

MARGARET. Farewell!

MARTHA. Sir! Sir! don't leave us till you tell  
One little matter more: I want a witness  
To prove his death and burial—how—when—where—  
Formally proved; and you will see the fitness  
Of having it on record—'twould be pleasant  
To have it in the papers of the week.

MEPHISTOPHELES. '*At the mouth of two witnesses the  
matter*

*Shall be established.*'—By good luck, at present  
There's one in town, who to the fact can speak;  
A man of character and high condition:  
He'll make the necessary deposition—  
I'll bring him in the evening.

MARTHA.

Don't be later.

MEPHISTOPHELES. And this young woman—shall we  
find her here?

She will so please him—nay, I do not flatter;—  
A fine young man—has travelled far and near—  
Is so admired—and so admires the sex,  
And has so true a feeling of decorum.

MARGARET. I feel afraid—to meet him would perplex  
And so confuse—I'd blush to death before him.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Were he a king—should it be  
thus?

MARTHA. The garden, then, behind my house—  
We shall expect both gentlemen  
This evening there—farewell till then.



## THE STREET

FAUST *and* MEPHISTOPHELES.

FAUST. How fare you ? goes it swimmingly on and swift ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Hurrah ! my friend—I'm glad to see your heart

On fire—she shall be yours in less than no time :  
This evening, we all meet at Neighbour Martha's.  
Of all the women that I ever saw  
She is the veriest gipsy—is the one  
To mould his Margaret to the doctor's purpose.

FAUST. All promises well so far.

MEPHISTOPHELES. But we are asked  
For something in return.

FAUST. That's reasonable—  
As one good turn, they say, deserves another.

MEPHISTOPHELES. We are only asked to make a  
deposition,  
In proper form, that her dead husband's bones  
Are lying decently interred in Padua,  
Quietly resting there in holy ground.

FAUST. Mighty fine doings ! what a pretty jaunt  
You have contrived for us !

MEPHISTOPHELES. *Sancta simplicitas !*  
Why should we go ? we are asked but to make oath—  
This may be done without the toil of travel,  
Or trouble of any kind.

FAUST. Is this your plan ?  
If you have nothing better to propose,  
The scheme is at an end.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Oh, holy man !  
Is it there you are now ? Doctor, is this your scruple ?  
Is this the first time in your life that you  
Have borne false witness ? have you lectured on  
God—and the world—and all that moves therein—  
On Man—and on 'how thought originates',



And that enigma, man's mysterious nature,  
The intellectual and the moral powers—  
Have you not dealt in formal definitions,  
With forehead unabashed, and heart undaunted ?  
Yet, if you did but own the truth, your conscience  
Must tell you—does it not ?—you know no more  
Of all these matters than of Schwerdtlein's death.

FAUST. Thou art, and wert, and thou wilt ever be  
A liar and sophist.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Yes ; if by appearances  
Only you judge : you, a philosopher,  
Should look a little deeper—you yourself,  
Ere two days pass—will you not ?—all in honour,  
As you would call it—fool this poor child's fancy,  
And swear,—your casuistry will then be silent—  
How from your soul you love her—love her ever.

FAUST. Yes, and such oath is true—

MEPHISTOPHELES.

—As any other ;—

And then of everlasting faith and love  
Will be the talk,—of all-absorbing passion—  
Of the one feeling—felt but once—for one :  
Will this, too, be a language that the heart  
Can recognize as true ?

FAUST. Peace, fiend ! it will,  
If that I feel, and if for the emotion—  
The frenzy call it, rather—I still seek  
A name and can find none—if through the world  
My fancy ranging seeks analogies  
That are, and ever must remain, imperfect—  
If words that speak of time be insufficient  
Even feebly to express this burning feeling,  
And that, thus forced, I call it endless—deathless—  
Eternal—yes, eternal—say you that  
Language like this is a Satanic lie ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Yet I am right.

FAUST. Hark ye—take this with you—  
I'll spare my lungs, and cease to argue further—  
But, as I said, take this with you ;—no matter  
What side a man adopts, or of what subject—



If he has but a tongue, he'll not want reasons  
To prove him in the right: as now, for instance:—  
I'm tired of talk—you then are in the right—  
You must be, sure, I have no help for it.

## THE GARDEN

MARGARET on FAUST'S arm, MARTHA with MEPHISTOPHELES.—*Walking loiteringly up and down.*

MARGARET. You do but play with my simplicity,  
And put me to the blush. A traveller  
Learns such good nature—is so pleased with all  
things  
And everybody:—my poor talk, I know,  
Has no attraction, that could for a moment  
Engage the attention of a man, who has  
Seen so much of the world——

FAUST. One glance—one word—  
One little word from thee, I value more  
Than all the wisdom of th' world's wisest ones.

*[Kisses her hand.]*

MARGARET. How could you think of it? How could  
you kiss it?  
It is so coarse—so hard—is spoiled with all work  
On every day—how could it but be coarse?  
My mother's habits are too close—my tasks  
Are too severe. *[They pass on.]*

MARTHA. And are you—are you always travelling  
thus?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Alas! that claims of business  
and of duty  
Should force me to it. We feel pangs at parting  
From many a spot where yet we may not loiter.

MARTHA. In youth's wild days, it cannot but be  
pleasant



This idle roaming round and round the world,  
 With wildfire spirits, and heart disengaged :  
 But soon comes age and sorrow ; and to drag,  
 Through the last years of life, down to the grave  
 A solitary creature—like the wretch,  
 Who moves from prison on to execution—  
 This must be bad for body and for soul.

MEPHISTOPHELES. You make me shudder at the  
 dreary prospect.

MARTHA. Be wise—secure yourself in time.

*[They pass on.]*

MARGARET. Yes !—out of sight, soon out of  
 mind.

I feel this courtesy is kind ;—  
 That you, who must have many a friend  
 Highly informed, should condescend  
 To speak with one in my poor station.  
 Of such neglected education,  
 —In every thing so unimproved—

FAUST. Believe me, dearest, best beloved,  
 That, which the world calls information,  
 Is often but the glitter chilling  
 Of vanity and want of feeling.

MARGARET. How ?

FAUST. Ah ! that—singleness of heart,  
 And absence of all artifice,  
 —Gifts, as they are, above all price,  
 Heaven's holiest blessing—should be thus  
 Of their own worth unconscious !  
 That—meekness, gentleness, the treasure  
 Which Nature, who doth still impart  
 To all in love, and lavish measure,  
 Gives to the child, whom she loves dearest,—  
 Should—

MARGARET. Think of me when you are gone,  
 A moment now and then—of you  
 I shall have time enough to think.

FAUST. Your time is passed, then, much alone ?

MARGARET. Why, yes ; and then our house affairs,  
 Poor though they be, bring many cares.



We have no servant maid, and I  
Must cook, knit, sew, must wash and dry ;  
Run far and near—rise ere the light,  
And not lie down till late at night.  
And then my mother's temper's such,  
In every thing she asks so much ;  
Of saving has so strict a sense,  
And is so fearful of expense ;  
So anxious, so particular :  
—Not that our circumstances are  
So limited, as not to give  
The means like other folk to live.  
The property my father had,  
And died possessed of, was not bad :  
A house, and garden here, that yields  
Something worth while, and some town fields  
Just at the gates. My days, somehow,  
Are tolerably quiet now—  
My brother earns a soldier's bread  
Abroad ;—my little sister's dead.  
Trouble enough I had with her,  
Yet cheerfully would I incur  
Ten times the toil—so dear was she.

FAUST. A very angel, if like thee !

MARGARET. Even from its birth, the child I nurst—  
And so it loved me from the first.  
Born to distress—its father torn  
Away by death, ere it was born.  
My mother, worn out with disease—  
We long had given her up for gone—  
Recovering faintly by degrees,  
Came slowly, very slowly on.  
She had no strength—she could not think  
Of nursing it—and so, poor thing,  
I reared it ; for its natural drink,  
With milk and water tried to bring  
The creature on—and thus my own  
It seemed to be, and mine alone—  
Lay on my arm, and on my breast  
Would play and nestle, and was blest.



FAUST. This must have been the purest joy.

MARGARET. Yet were there hours of great annoy—  
Its cradle was by my bedside :  
It kept me half the night awake,  
To make it quiet when I tried.—  
At times must I get up, to take  
The little urchin into bed ;  
This would not do—then must I rise,  
Walk up and down with measured tread,  
And seek with songs to hush its cries.  
Then daylight brought its tasks to me :  
Ere dawn must I at washing be—  
Trudge to the market—light the fire ;  
And if I felt the trouble tire  
On one day, 'twas the same the next.  
I felt dispirited, and vext  
At times ; but I was wrong in this ;  
For, after all, his labour is  
What gives a poor man's food its zest,  
And makes his bed a bed of rest.

*[They pass on.]*

MARTHA. We women are the sufferers : who can  
make  
Anything of a dissolute old rake ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Yet have I perfect faith in  
woman's skill ;  
You may, for instance, make me what you will.

MARTHA. But tell me plainly, have you never met  
One whom you loved ?—thought you of marriage  
yet ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. A blessed state—in Proverbs we  
are told,

A good wife better is than pearls or gold.

MARTHA. But is there none with preference you  
would name ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. All are polite and everywhere the  
same.

MARTHA. Have you no one in seriousness addressed ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. With ladies can you think that  
I would jest ?



MARTHA. You still mistake me.

MEPHISTOPHELES. I regret to find  
How slow I am; but one thing to my mind  
Is clear, that you are very, very kind. [*They pass on.*]

FAUST. And so thou didst, my angel—didst thou  
not?—

The moment that I came into the garden,  
Remember me again, upon the spot?

MARGARET. Did you not see it?—I held down my  
eyes.

FAUST. And thou dost,—dost thou not?—the  
freedom pardon

Which, as you passed from the Cathedral home,  
I rashly took?

MARGARET. I felt so much surprise.  
And was, I scarce can tell you, so confused,  
And trembled like a guilty thing accused.  
'Into his head could such a thought have come?—  
What must he think of thee?—there must have been  
Something improper in thy walk or mien;  
Something that gave this gentleman to see,  
Here is a girl with whom you may make free.'  
Yet must I own I did not then detect  
How my heart pleaded for thee, nor suspect  
I with myself was angry, that, with thee,  
As angry as I ought, I could not be.

FAUST. Sweet love!

MARGARET. One moment wait.

*[She plucks a star-flower, and picks off the leaves  
one after another.]*

FAUST. Why pluck the star-flower?

—Do you wish a bunch of flowers?

MARGARET.

No, I just fancied

Trying a little game of chance.

FAUST.

What mean you?

MARGARET. You will laugh at me.

*[She plucks off the leaves, and murmurs to herself.]*

FAUST. What are you murmuring?

MARGARET (*half aloud*). He loves me—loves me not.



FAUST.

Angelic creature !

MARGARET. *He loves me—not—He loves me—not—*

*[As she plucks off the last leaf with eager delight.*  
*He loves me !*

FAUST. Yes, my child, deem this language of the  
flower

The answer of an oracle—‘ He loves thee ! ’

Dost thou know all the meaning of ‘ He loves thee ’ ?

*[Holds both her hands.*

MARGARET. I am all over trembling.

FAUST. Tremble not !

Oh, let this look, this pressure of the hands,  
Say, to thee, what no words can say : henceforth  
Be our whole being lost in one another  
In overflowing joy—that lives and lives  
For ever and for ever ! could it end,  
It were—but no, it cannot, cannot end !

*[MARGARET presses his hands ; disengages herself  
from him, and runs away. He stands for  
a moment, thoughtful, and follows her.*

MARTHA. The night is coming on.

MEPHISTOPHELES. We should be going.

MARTHA. I would invite you to stay longer, but  
We live in a censorious neighbourhood.  
They seem to have nothing to think of or to do  
But watch the doors, and who go in and out :  
Do what you will, your doings will be misconstrued :  
But our young couple—saw you them ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. They’ve flown  
Up yonder walk—gay butterflies—

MARTHA. He seems  
Caught.

MEPHISTOPHELES. And she too. ’Tis the way of the  
world.



## A SUMMER HOUSE

MARGARET *runs in ; fixes herself behind the door ; holds the tip of her finger to her lips, and peeps through the crevice.*

MARGARET. He comes.

FAUST. Ah, rogue ! and do you thus provoke me ?  
I've caught you at last. *[Kisses her.]*

MARGARET *(embracing him and returning the kiss).*  
Dearest and best, with my whole heart I love thee.  
*[MEPHISTOPHELES knocks.]*

FAUST *(stamping).* Who's there ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. A friend.

FAUST. A brute.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Full time to go.

MARTHA *(comes up).* 'Tis late, my lord.—

FAUST. May I not see you home ?

MARGARET. My mother would—farewell.

FAUST. Must I then go?—

Farewell.

MARTHA. Adieu !

MARGARET. To meet again, and soon.

*[Exeunt FAUST and MEPHISTOPHELES.]*

MARGARET. How many things a man like this  
Must know ;—and I had but a 'Yes',  
For everything he said ;—confused  
By every word ; yet he excused  
Each fault of mine. What can it be,  
That thus attaches him to me ?

## FOREST AND CAVERN

FAUST *(alone).* Yes ! lofty Spirit, thou hast given  
me all,

All that I asked of thee ; and not in vain,  
In unconsuming fire revealed, hast thou  
Been with me, manifesting gloriously



Thy presence—thou hast looked on me with love,  
—Hast given me empire o'er majestic Nature;  
Power to enjoy and feel! 'Twas not alone  
The stranger's short permitted privilege  
Of momentary wonder that thou gavest;  
No, thou hast given me into her deep breast  
As into a friend's secret heart to look;  
Hast brought to me the tribes of living things:  
Thus teaching me to recognize and love  
My brothers in still grove, or air, or stream.  
And when in the wide wood the tempest raves,  
And shrieks, and rends the giant pines, uproots,  
Disbranches, and, with maddening grasp uplifting,  
Flings them to earth, and from the hollow hill  
Dull moaning thunders echo their descent;  
Then dost thou lead me to the safe retreat  
Of some low cavern, there exhibiting  
To my awed soul its own mysterious nature!  
Of my own heart the depths miraculous,  
Its secret inward being all exposed!  
And when before my eye the pure moon walks  
High overhead, diffusing a soft light,  
Then from the rocks, and over the damp wood,  
The pale bright shadows of the ancient times  
Before me seem to move, and mitigate  
The too severe delight of earnest thought!—

Alas! even now I feel MAN's joys must be  
Imperfect ever. The ecstatic bliss,  
Which lifts me near and nearer to the gods;  
This is thy gift; but with it thou hast given,  
Inseparably linked, this vile associate,  
Whom I abominate, but cannot part:—  
Cold, insolent, malicious, he contrives  
To make me to myself contemptible;  
And with a breath will scatter into nothing  
All these high gifts; with what officious zeal  
He fans my breast into a raging flame  
Of passion, to possess that perfect form  
Of loveliness! Thus, from desire I pass



On to enjoyment, and, uneasy still,  
Even in enjoyment languish for desire!

[MEPHISTOPHELES enters.]

MEPHISTOPHELES. Have you not had enough of this  
before?

A pretty kind of life to live for ever!  
Well enough for a trial. Come, come, let us  
Seek something new.

FAUST. I wish you had something else  
To do than thus torment me when I'm quiet.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Well! well! and if you wish I'll  
leave you here

To your delights—never say it again.  
Great loss to me, indeed, 'twould be to lose  
A petulant, unsocial, crazy creature  
Of a companion—kept the whole day long  
Busy, and never can make any guess  
From my lord's countenance, whether your worship  
Is pleased or is displeased by what I do.

FAUST. Aye, there's the tone—that is so very like  
him:

Tires me to death—expects me then to thank him!

MEPHISTOPHELES. Poor child of earth! and couldst  
thou, then, have borne

Thy life till now without my aid? 'Twas I  
That saved thee from imaginations idle!  
I guarded thee with long and anxious care;  
And, but for me, even now thou wouldst have been  
Idling in other worlds! Why sittest thou there,  
Lingering in hollow cave, or rifted rock,  
Dull as the moping owl? Why, like the toad,  
Dost thou support a useless life, deriving  
Subsistence from damp moss and dripping stone?  
Sweet pastime this! most charming occupation!  
I fear you've not forgotten your old trade.

FAUST. Couldst thou conceive what added life is  
given

In hours like this, passed in the wilderness,  
And couldst thou feel it—still thou wouldst remain  
The devil thou art—still hate and poison it!



Wouldst grudge the short delight——

MEPHISTOPHELES.

Delight indeed!

Yes, transcendental rapture!—mighty fine!—

In night and dew lying among the hills,

In ecstasy embracing earth and heaven—

To swell up till you are a kind of god—

To pierce into the marrow of the earth

In a fool's fancies—all the six-days' task

Of the creation in thy breast to feel—

And in the pride of conscious power enjoy

I know not what of bliss,—to cherish love

That has no limits, but must overflow

Till it loves everything that is—till earth

And man's poor nature, in the trance forgotten,

Has passed away—and then the glorious hour

Of intuition ending—how it ends

I must not say——

FAUST.

Fie, fie upon thee.

MEPHISTOPHELES.

Yes!

'Fie, fie!'—it does not suit your taste, forsooth—

Fie, fie! this mannerly word sounds very well

In your mouth now. The modest ears are closed,

And will not hear of what the modest heart

Yet cannot go without. Good, good!—a word,

However, upon what you said—I grudge not

To you or any man such pleasure, as

He now and then may feel, in playing tricks

Of self-deception; pity 'twill not last.

You are already blown out of your course—

Are almost what you were when first we met;

And, if you don't take care, will fret yourself

Soon into actual madness—frenzy-fever,

Or melancholy horror. For your own sake

Have done with this: your love, poor creature! sits

Within there,—you should soothe her! All with her

Is sad and gloomy—out of her poor mind

You never are: she loves devotedly,

Poor thing!—on thee she thinks—thinks evermore.

First came the flood of thy o'erflowing passion,

As swells, when the snows melt, a mountain brook



Above its banks—and thou into her heart  
 Hast poured the sudden gush ; and now the brook  
 Is dry with thee again : methinks 'twere well,  
 Instead of reigning here among the woods  
 On an imaginary throne, that you  
 Would comfort the young monkey, and requite  
 The poor thing for her love,—to her the time  
 Seems miserably long—she lingers at  
 The window, gazes on the clouds that pass  
 Slow o'er the old town-walls. ' Oh that I were  
 A little bird ! ' she cries. This is her song  
 All the day long, and half the heavy night !  
 One moment is she mirthful—mostly is  
 Sad,—then she weeps till she can weep no more ;  
 Then, as 'twould seem, she is at rest again.  
 But mirth or grief, whatever the mood be,  
 This all is love—deep, tender, passionate love.

FAUST. Serpent—vile serpent !

MEPHISTOPHELES (*aside*). Aye, and one that stings.

FAUST. Infamous wretch, begone ! name not her  
 name—

Pollute it not—stir not into desire  
 My half-distracted senses.

MEPHISTOPHELES.

What is this ?—

She deems herself abandoned—and is right.

FAUST. Off, viper !

MEPHISTOPHELES. You are raving—I am laughing :  
 What a hard task it is, forsooth—just think,  
 And let it cure your spirits,—you are going  
 Not—as to look at you one might believe—  
 Not to the gibbet—but to a fond mistress !

FAUST. What were the joys of Heaven, though with  
 them blest

In her embrace ?—could my disquiet be  
 Stilled on her bosom ? could it hush to rest  
 This drear presentiment of her undoing ?  
 And am I not the outcast—the accurst—  
 The homeless one, whose wanderings never cease—  
 The monster of his kind ? No rest for me—  
 No aim—no object ; like the stream, that, nurst



With swelling rains, foaming from rock to rock,  
Along its course of ruin,  
On to the inevitable precipice—  
Plunges impatient down the blind abyss,  
And violently seeks the desperate shock.  
And—by the side of such mad stream—was she,  
—A child with a child's feelings;—her low cot  
In the green field upon the mountain-slope,  
And all that she could wish, or love, or hope,  
Her little world, all—all in that poor spot;—  
And I—the heaven-detested!—was it not  
Enough, that the mad torrent grasped and tore  
The rocks, and shivered them to dust, and bore  
All, that opposed me, in my downward course  
On with me?—Her, too, her—her peace—her joy—  
These must I undermine?—these too destroy?  
Hell! Hell!—this victim also!—Thy support,  
Devil! and the dreadful interval make short!  
What must be, be it soon! Let the crush fall  
Down on me of her ruin—perish all—  
She—I—and these wild thoughts together!

MEPHISTOPHELES. What! in the fever-fit again?  
How seethes and burns the muddy brain!  
—Idiot, go in, and comfort her.

Thus is it ever with the crazy pate,  
When difficulties thwart,  
Or unforeseen calamities occur:  
Fools, when they cannot see their way,  
At once grow desperate,  
Have no resource—have nothing to propose—  
But fix a dull eye of dismay  
Upon the final close.  
Success to the stout heart, say I,  
That sees its fate, and can defy!  
—Yet art thou, though of such soft stuff,  
In most things pretty devil enough;—  
Of all insipid things, I least can bear  
That sickening dose—a devil in despair!



## MARGARET'S OWN ROOM

MARGARET (*alone at the spinning-wheel*).*(Sings.)*

My peace is gone,  
 And my heart is sore :  
 I have lost him, and lost him,  
 For evermore !

The place, where he is not,  
 To me is the tomb,  
 The world is sadness,  
 And sorrow and gloom !

My poor sick brain  
 Is crazed with pain,  
 And my poor sick heart  
 Is torn in twain !

My peace is gone,  
 And my heart is sore,  
 For lost is my love  
 For evermore !

From the window for him  
 My heavy eyes roam ;  
 To seek him, all lonely  
 I wander from home.

His noble form,  
 His bearing high,  
 The smiles of his lip,  
 And the power of his eye ;

And the magic tone  
 Of that voice of his,  
 His hands' soft pressure,  
 And oh ! his kiss !



My peace is gone,  
 And my heart is sore ;  
 I have lost him, and lost him,  
 For evermore !

Far wanders my heart  
 To feel him near,  
 Oh ! could I clasp him,  
 And hold him here !

Hold him and kiss him,  
 Oh ! I could die !  
 To feed on his kisses,  
 How willingly !

## MARTHA'S GARDEN.

MARGARET—FAUST.

MARGARET.—Promise me, Henry.

FAUST.

Be assured, my love.

MARGARET. Now tell me how you are as to religion ?  
 You are a dear good man—but, I rather fear  
 You have not much of it.

FAUST.

Forbear, my child,

You feel I love you, and for those I love  
 I would lay down my life. I would not rob  
 Any one of his feeling, or his church—

MARGARET. 'Tis well—but more than that—we must  
 believe.

FAUST. Must we ?

MARGARET.

Oh, had I any influence !

—You honour not the holy sacraments ?

FAUST. I honour them.

MARGARET.

But you do not receive.—

At mass or shrift 'tis long since you have been.  
 Do you believe in God ?

FAUST.

Forbear, my love ;

Who can say truly, 'I believe in God' ?



—Ask it of priest or of philosopher,  
And the reply seems but a mockery  
Of him who asks.

MARGARET.

Then thou dost not believe !

FAUST. Misunderstand me not, thou best-beloved :  
Who can name Him, and, knowing what he says,  
Say, ' I believe in Him ' ? And who can feel,  
And, with self-violence, to conscious wrong  
Hardening his heart, say, ' I believe him not ! '   
The All-embracing, All-sustaining One,  
Say, doth he not embrace, sustain, include  
Thee ?—Me ?—Himself ?—Bends not the sky above ?  
And earth, on which we are, is it not firm ?  
And over us with constant kindly smile,  
The sleepless stars keep everlasting watch !  
Am I not here gazing into thine eyes ?

And does not All, that is,

—Seen and unseen, mysterious all—

Around thee, and within,

Untiring agency,

Press on thy heart and mind ?

—Fill thy whole heart with it—and when thou art  
Lost in the consciousness of happiness—

Then call it what thou wilt,

Happiness !—heart !—love !—GOD !

I have no name for it—Feeling is all ;

Name, sound and smoke,

Dimming the glow of heaven !

MARGARET. This is all good and right ;  
The priest says pretty much the same,  
But in words somewhat different.

FAUST.

Everywhere,

All hearts beneath the universal Heaven,

In its own language each doth utter it—

Then why not I in mine ?

MARGARET.

Made easy thus

'Tis plausible—yet must it be unsafe :

Thou art no Christian.

FAUST.

Hush, my child.

MARGARET. I grieve to see the company thou keepest.



FAUST. What do you mean ?

MARGARET. The man whom thou hast ever at thy side,

I hate him from the bottom of my soul.  
In my whole life, has nothing given my heart  
So deep a wound, as that man's alien visage.

FAUST. Beloved, fear him not.

MARGARET. The very sight of him makes my blood  
thrill !

To most men I feel kindness—but him  
Do I detest ; and with a feeling strong,  
Strong as my love for you—strong as my wishes  
To have you with me—does a secret shudder  
Creep over me when I behold this man.  
He is—I cannot be deceived—he is  
A villain ;—God forgive me, if I wrong him !

FAUST. He's a queer fellow—do not mind his oddi-  
ties.

MARGARET. I would not—could not, live together  
with him.

If for a moment he comes to the door,  
He will look in with such an air of mockery,  
And a half scowl, and a face dark with anger  
Kept down—you see he has no interest  
In anything—'tis written on his brow  
He feels no love for any living soul—  
And when I am so happy in thy arms,  
In the sweet confidence of love forgetting—  
Forgetting everything but thee, then—then  
He's sure to come, and my heart shrinks and withers !

FAUST. Foreboding angel, these are weak misgiv-  
ings !

MARGARET. The feeling overmasters me so wholly  
That if he does but join us, straightway seems it  
As if I ceased to love thee—where he is  
I could not pray. This eats into my heart.  
Henry, it cannot be but that you feel  
In this as I do.

FAUST. This is antipathy.

MARGARET. I must away.



FAUST. Alas ! and may I never  
Meet thee, where none can come to trouble us ?  
One little hour—and must it never be ?—  
Heart prest to happy heart, and soul to soul !

MARGARET. Ah, that I slept alone ! This very night  
How gladly would I leave the door unbolted !  
But then my mother's sleep is far from sound ;  
Did she awake and find you there, I should,  
Methinks, drop dead upon the spot.

FAUST. Dear angel, throw aside such fears ; this  
    phial  
Take with you. Three drops of it only, poured  
Into her drink, wrap nature up in sleep,  
Deep tranquil sleep.

MARGARET. I must do as you bid.  
Could I refuse you ?—'Twill not injure her ?

FAUST. It will not : otherwise would I advise it ?

MARGARET. Dearly beloved, if I but look on you  
I must obey—I cannot hesitate :  
There is a something not to be resisted,  
Which overpowers me—makes your will my guide  
In everything ; and having gone so far  
Already, is choice left me ? Having given  
So much, what is there for me to refuse ? [*Exit.*

MEPHISTOPHELES (*enters*). The monkey ! is it gone ?

FAUST. Again—  
Spying ?—

MEPHISTOPHELES. Yes, and I heard quite plain  
The doctor schooled,—the catechumen  
Getting a lesson in his creed,  
And catechism, from a young woman,  
Just now ;—I hope that it agreed  
With you ! The girls' anxiety  
For sentimental piety  
Is soon explained. The man, think they,  
Who worships in the good old way,  
When his priest bids him kneels and bows,  
Is likely to obey his spouse :  
This of itself ensures his wife  
A quiet, fair and easy life.



The women fancy, and the fact is  
Confirmed, or often so, in practice,  
That their admirers are most found  
Where your religious men abound—  
Love is almost the same emotion :  
The devotee—such is their notion—  
Thus for the sex feels true devotion,  
Courts amorous thoughts and mystic dreaming,  
Is led by priests, and follows women.

FAUST. Oh ! what a monster must thou be,  
To see not, or with scoffing see,  
How this poor girl's affections lead  
The pious creature thus to plead ;  
The faith, in which she moves and lives—  
That which alone salvation gives—  
So she believes—may make her fear  
Danger to one whom she holds dear ;  
Fear for the issue of a strife  
Where more, she feels, is risked than life !

MEPHISTOPHELES. Most sentimental sensualist,  
—Philosopher at once and beast,—  
Led by the nose by a young flirt !

FAUST. Abortion—spawn of fire and dirt !

MEPHISTOPHELES (*scornfully*).—On Physiognomy she  
also lectures

Profoundly—feels, when I am present,  
Sensations strange and most unpleasant :  
—Suppressed malignity my smile betrays ;  
I wear a mask, forsooth, I will not raise,  
And what it hides she sapiently conjectures,  
Something mysteriously allied to evil,  
A genius—or, perhaps, the very devil.  
To-night then.

FAUST.

What's to-night to thee ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. I've my amusements too—we'll  
see.



## AT THE WELL

MARGARET *and* LIZZY (*with pitchers*).

LIZZY. Have you not heard of Hannah's pretty doing ?

MARGARET. No, not a word—I've been but little out.

LIZZY. Kate told it me to-day—there's not a doubt Of its truth. This comes of airs and impudence : I always said her pride would be her ruin.

MARGARET. What mean you ?

LIZZY. What I mean all know but you— Why, when she eats and drinks she's feeding two.

MARGARET. Poor thing !

LIZZY. Poor thing, indeed ! great pity for her ; Why, she was always finding some pretence To be in company with this adorer Of hers ;—at every party—every walk— How she made out a time for private talk ! Would hang upon his arm, and still be seen For evermore with him, at booth or green. She thought herself so fine, none could come near her ; And then their feastings—cakes and wine must cheer her

After their rambles : then her vanity About her beauty almost like insanity— And then her meanness—think of her insisting Upon his making handsome presents to her— Then came soft words, when there were none to listen, Then all a girl can give she gave her wooer !

MARGARET. The poor, poor thing !

LIZZY. And do you pity her ? When *we* were kept close to our wheels, and when Our mothers would not suffer us to stir Abroad at night, or loiter with the men, Then were they on the seat before the door, Or in the dark walk lingering evermore ;



Now for the stool and white sheet of repentance ;  
For one, I feel no sorrow at her sentence.

MARGARET. Poor creature ! but, no doubt, he'll  
marry her.

LIZZY. He !—he'll be no such fool—the de'il may  
carry her,

For what he cares—they say that he is off ;  
He'll find another market soon enough.

MARGARET. That is not fair.

LIZZY.

Twill be almost as bad,  
We will so plague her—if she get the lad ;—  
The wedding garland, should she think to wear it,  
From the mock virgin shall the children tear it ;  
And, at her door, what fun we shall have, spreading  
Chopped straw, to greet the promise of their wedding.  
[Exit.

MARGARET (*returning home*). How I would rail when  
some poor girl went wrong !

How, when it was another's sin and shame,  
Words of reproach would rise up to my tongue !  
It was, it was black—oh how black, and I  
Blackened it more and more—no words of blame  
This virtuous scorn of mine could satisfy—  
Others might fall, but I more proud became—  
I blessed myself, and held myself so high,  
And I who thus could feel—am I the same ?  
But could I—who could—have resisted here ?  
All was so good ! all was so very dear !



## ZWINGER.—A LITTLE SHRINE

*In a niche of the wall an image of the MATER DOLOROSA, with flowers before it.—MARGARET places fresh flowers in the bowls.*

MARGARET.

Mother benign,  
Look down on me !  
No grief like thine ;  
Thou who dost see  
In his death-agony  
Thy Son divine.

In faith unto the Father dost thou lift up thine eyes ;  
In faith unto the Father dost pray with many sighs.  
The sword is piercing thine own soul, and thou in pain  
dost pray,  
That the pangs which torture him, and are thy pangs,  
may pass away.

And who my wound can heal,  
And who the pain can feel,  
That rends asunder brain and bone ?  
How my poor heart, within me aching,  
Trembles and yearns, and is forsaken—  
Thou knowest it—thou alone !

Where can I go ? Where can I go ?  
Everywhere woe ! woe ! woe !  
Nothing that does not my own grief betoken ;  
And when I am alone,  
I moan, and moan, and moan,  
And am heart-broken.

The flowers upon my window sill,  
Wet with my tears since dawn they be ;  
All else were sleeping, while I was weeping,  
Praying and choosing flowers for thee.



Into my chamber brightly  
Came the early sun's good morrow ;  
On my restless bed, unsightly,  
I sate up in my sorrow.

Oh, in this hour of death, and the near grave,  
Succour me, thou, and save !  
Look on me with that countenance benign.  
Never was grief like thine,—  
Look down, look down on mine !

## NIGHT

## STREET BEFORE MARGARET'S DOOR.

VALENTINE (*a soldier—MADGE'S brother*). Till now,  
as round the canteen hearth,  
My 'comrades, in their drunken mirth,  
Would of their favourites gaily boast,  
And pledge with soldier's glee the toast ;  
How on my elbow I would rest,  
Smile as each swore his own the best,  
And stroke my beard, and raise my glass,  
And when my turn to name the lass  
Came round, would say, ' Each to his taste ;  
In my own home my heart is placed.  
Where is the maiden, anywhere,  
That with my Margaret can compare ?  
Is there than Madge's in the land  
A truer heart or fairer hand ? '  
Oh, then, how cups and goblets rang,  
While voices rose with joyous clang :  
' Right, right,' in chorus, hundreds cried,  
' First of them all—the country's pride—  
His sister is '—and dumb and tame  
The boasters suddenly became.  
And now—oh, I could rend my hair,  
Could dash my brains out in despair ;—



Now must I feel my bosom gored  
 By daggers in each casual word,  
 And every ruffian's sneering eye  
 And scornful taunt my patience try;  
 Gnawing my wrath must I remain,  
 And suffer and suppress my pain,  
 Nor dare say any word again;  
 As hears the debtor gibe and curse,  
 Who meets a claim with empty purse.  
 Avenge it—what can vengeance do?  
 Must I not feel the taunt is true?

See yonder! sneaking out of sight,  
 Two skulking scoundrels.—Am I right?  
 —'Tis he—would Heaven that it were he—  
 He scarce shall 'scape me if it be.

FAUST—MEPHISTOPHELES.

FAUST. See, in the window of yon sacristy,  
 How from its little lamp the constant light  
 Streams up—while, at the sides, less and less bright,  
 'Tis fading—till it dies in the thick night  
 That deepens round—and thus is it with me—  
 Darkness on every side around me spreads.

MEPHISTOPHELES. And I am like the thievish cat  
 that treads,  
 Prowling along, up ladders and down leads—  
 A nibble in the dark—there's no harm in it—  
 Or snatching on the roof a stolen love-minute.  
 Already do I feel the power,  
 The fun and frolic of the hour;  
 The advent of WALPURGIS NIGHT  
 Bids every limb thrill with delight:  
 Another night—another day,  
 And then the glorious FIRST OF MAY;  
 Then to the Brocken fare we forth,  
 Then learn that life is something worth.

FAUST. Behold yon blue light glimmering!  
 Is that the treasure? Lurks it there?



And will it from the dark earth spring ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Be patient—you shall shortly bring

The casket into open air :

I peeped into the secret hoard,

And saw the lion-dollars stored.

FAUST. What ! merely money ? who would think it ?

What good is this ? no ring—no trinket ?

No ornament for the dear girl ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Oh yes ; there are some beads of pearl.

FAUST. I am glad of it,—it is not pleasant To go to her without some present.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Is there then no such thing as pleasure,

But what you may by payment measure ?

I differ there with you—but see,

The heaven is hushed, and full of stars :

Now for a moment favour me

With silence—while I sing some bars

Of an old song—a sweet old air,

Touched with true skill—a moral song

That lures the heart and will along.

*(Sings to the guitar.)*

Why, Catherine, stay

At dawn of day,

At dawning grey,

Before the younker's door ?

The merry blade

Lets in the maid,

That out a maid

Never departeth more !

Beware—beware,

And guard, ye fair,

Your hearts with care.

Poor things, beware of men—

Oh, listen not to anything



They may say, or swear, or sing,  
Till on the finger is the ring—  
Beware, say I again.

VALENTINE (*comes forward*). What brings ye here?  
whom come ye to destroy,  
Cursed rat-catchers?—to the devil with the lure—  
To the devil with the scoundrels.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Well done, boy,  
The poor guitar is cracked beyond all cure.

VALENTINE. Now for his skull.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Now, Doctor, now's your time.  
Courage—stick close—that's a brave fellow:  
Have at him—just do as I tell you—  
Out with your duster—thrust away—  
I'll parry.

VALENTINE.

Parry that.

MEPHISTOPHELES.  
Easily done.

Child's play!

VALENTINE.

And that.

MEPHISTOPHELES.

As easy quite.

VALENTINE. The devil assists him in the fight—  
My hand is wounded.

MEPHISTOPHELES.

Now thrust home.

VALENTINE. Oh, torture!

MEPHISTOPHELES. The clown's done for—come,  
We'd best be off—have not a minute  
To lose—already is the cry  
Of murder raised—and although I  
Know the police, and have friends in it,  
This is a very ugly scrape.  
To manage it in any shape  
Perplexes me.

MARTHA (*at the window*). Up!—up!—

MARGARET (*at her window*). A light!

MARTHA. Railing and scuffling—how they fight!

PEOPLE (*in the street*). One of them is already dead.

MARTHA. Seize on the murderers—are they fled?

MARGARET (*coming out*). Who is it?—who?



PEOPLE.

Thy mother's son.

MARGARET. Oh God !

VALENTINE. I die—said soon—soon done !  
Women, why stand you wailing, crying ?  
Will you not listen ? I am dying.  
Margaret, take counsel, you are still  
Young, and conduct your business ill ;  
I speak in confidence—you are  
A strumpet—throw away pretence—  
Be one in earnest—there were sense  
In this—be one thing or the other.

MARGARET. My God ! what can you mean, my  
brother ?

VALENTINE. Best let the name of God alone !  
That which is done, alas ! is done.  
The past is past—the wretched game  
You play is everywhere the same,  
Begins in folly—ends in shame.  
First one man visits—then, less private,  
Another ; soon the coy beginner  
Will welcome all, till she arrive at  
The streets, and is a common sinner.

When SHAME is born, she shrinks from sight,  
Draws over her the veil of night,  
Trembles at every stir, and tries  
Of hood and cloak the mean disguise,  
Yea—unfamiliar yet with sin—  
Would hush the warning voice within.  
On moves she unobserved, unknown ;  
But bigger soon, and bolder grown,  
Walks, hand in hand, the broad highway,  
With SLANDER, in the eye of day,  
And as her features, marred and coarse,  
From hour to hour look worse and worse,  
While men behold her with affright,  
She stalks affronting the daylight.

Already do I see the day,  
When all, with loathing, turn away



From thee, as from a plague-struck corse,  
 I see the gnawings of remorse :  
 —Abandoned outcast of the street,  
 How wilt thou bear their eyes to meet ?  
 Never, as once, the golden chain  
 To wear in pride—never again !  
 Never again, that fairest face,  
 To shine at church, in the high place,  
 And never more the dance to grace ;—  
 No more in modest pride to deck  
 With frills of snowy lace thy neck ;  
 But in some filthy nook to lie,  
 'Mong strumpets live—'mong beggars die ;  
 And find, for thee, heart-broken one,  
 Though God has mercy, Man has none.

MARTHA. Pray, dying man, for mercy ; dread  
 To heap God's curses on thy head !

VALENTINE. Fiend, could I tear thy leprous skin !  
 Procuress ! sordid slave of sin !  
 Then might I rest, my conscience freed  
 From every weight by that one deed.

MARGARET. My brother—oh, what agony—  
 Brother, forgive—I grieve for thee.

VALENTINE. Cease weeping thus for me : thy fall—  
 That was the sharpest wound of all.  
 Fearless I go—as fits the brave—  
 To God and to a soldier's grave.

## CATHEDRAL

SERVICE.—ORGAN AND ANTHEM.

MARGARET *among a number of people*.—EVIL SPIRIT  
*behind* MARGARET.

EVIL SPIRIT. How changed is everything  
 With thee, poor Margaret,  
 Since when, still full of innocence,  
 Thou to this very altar



Didst come, and from the little old thumb'd prayer-  
book

Didst lisp the murmured prayers ;  
Half with the children out at play,  
In a child's happy fancies, thy young heart,  
And half with God in heaven.

And dost thou, canst thou think ? . .

Thy brain, where wanders it ? . .

In thy heart, oh what a weight

Of guilt, of evil done !

Prayest thou for thy mother's soul—

She who through thee did sleep and sleep away  
Into undying agonies ?

And on thy door-stead whose the blood ?

And in thy bosom is there not

A stirring, that is torture,

And with foreboding fears

Makes felt the present woe ?

MARGARET.

Woe, woe !

Oh that I could escape

These dark thoughts flitting over and athwart me,  
And all accusing me !

CHOIR. DIES IRAE, DIES ILLA

SOLVET SÆCLUM IN FAVILLA.

EVIL SPIRIT.

The judgement arrests thee—

The trumpet is sounding—

The graves are astir—

And thy heart,

From the sleep of its ashes,

For fiery torture

Created again,

Awakes up and trembles.

MARGARET. That I were out of this—

I feel as if the organ

Stifled my breathing,

And that the anthem was

Breaking my heart.



CHOIR. JUDEX ERGO CUM SEDEBIT,  
 QUIDQUID LATET ADPAREBIT,  
 NIL INULTUM REMANEBIT.

MARGARET. I feel so tightened here,  
 The pillars of the wall  
 Are grasping me ;  
 The arch above  
 Weighs on me.—Air !

EVIL SPIRIT.

Hide thyself—sin and shame  
 Will find thee out—  
 Oh, never were they hidden—  
 Air—light—exposure—  
 Woe's thee !

CHOIR. QUID SUM MISER TUNC DICTURUS,  
 QUEM PATRONUM ROGATURUS,  
 CUM VIX JUSTUS SIT SECURUS.

EVIL SPIRIT.

From thee their countenances  
 The sons of light all turn.  
 To reach to thee their hands  
 Makes the pure shudder—  
 Woe !

CHOIR. QUID SUM MISER TUNC DICTURUS.

MARGARET (*fainting*) to the girl next her. Your flasket,  
 friend.

## WALPURGIS NIGHT

HARTZ MOUNTAINS.

SHIRKE AND ELEND.

FAUST—MEPHISTOPHELES.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Would not a broomstick be a  
 good thing here  
 For a tired man to ride ? I wish I had got  
 A buck-goat, rough and tough—neck thick, trot quick :



The road is long, and we are loitering,  
The time just come—the place still far away.

FAUST. While I feel firm upon my limbs, the road  
Thus wild and intricate but pleases me;  
And this knobbed staff affords support enough.  
Why should we wish the way more short? To steal  
Silently through the deep vale's labyrinth,  
And issuing thence to climb these rocks, from which  
The bubbling water gushes up for ever,  
And streams a white precipitous cataract—  
'Tis this—'tis this that makes such paths delightful.  
The stirring breath of spring hath waked the  
birch,

And the slow pine already feels her power—  
Shall we alone of all that live and breathe  
Remain uninfluenced by her cheering spirit?

MEPHISTOPHELES. I can feel nothing of it—all  
within

With me is winter—give me the bleak snow,  
And the cold ice upon my desolate path.  
With what a red and melancholy light  
The waning moon's imperfect orb is moving,  
Casting faint, cold, unserviceable beams,  
And making each step dangerous—lest the foot  
Dash 'gainst some straggling tree or jutting rock;  
I'll call a wildfire Will-o'-the-Wisp to light us.  
See, there is one burns bright and merrily.  
The freakish spark, look, how he flings away  
On the regardless night his spendthrift splendour.  
Holla! my friend, come join our company;  
Come, come, instead of wasting idly there,  
Come be the pilot of our perilous way,  
Move on, and light us through the desert moors.

WILL-O'-THE-WISP. Yours most respectfully—I'll  
strive to serve you;

But it is struggling against nature—devious  
And zig-zag is our customary course.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Ha, ha!—ha, ha! he thinks to  
mimic man;

Go straight—for once—in the devil's name, go straight—



On, saucy spark, on—or I'll blow thee out,  
 Poor gleam of marsh-light life.

WILL-O'-THE-WISP.

'Tis plain to see

That the master of the house is here—my lord,  
 I will be all I can be, to oblige you,—  
 But, think, the hill to-day is mad with magic ;  
 And, if we should not go the straightest road,  
 Remember that your guide is but a meteor.

✓ FAUST, MEPHISTOPHELES, METEOR (*alternately*).

### SONG.

Into the magic world, the centre  
 Of fancies strange and dreamy science,  
 By a meteor led, we enter,  
 His wild light our best reliance.  
 Then, Meteor, guide us on in haste,  
 Through regions lonely, wide, and waste.

Woods—how swift they vanish by us !  
 Trees on trees—how fast they fly us !  
 And the cliffs, with antic greeting,  
 Bending forward and retreating,  
 How they mock the midnight meeting ;  
 Ghastly rocks grin glaring on us,  
 Panting, blowing, as they shun us !

Trickling on, through sward and stone,  
 Rill and rivulet run down—  
 Murmuring and rustling near,  
 Voices meet and mock the ear ;  
 Sweet sounds greet us from above :  
 Are they—are they words of love ?  
 Tender tones, that from the wild wood  
 Whisper back the days of childhood ?  
 All that was, when we were young,  
 EDEN to the heart, now meets it ;  
 And the rock, with airy tongue,  
 Recalls, restores, the enchanted song,  
 And lingering in love repeats it.



How the song of echo chimes  
Like the voice of other times !

Tu-whoo !—Tu-whoo !—the owl's in view—  
Nearer, clearer, comes his hooting—  
Through the dusk air see him shooting—  
The long-horned owl, with pinions grey,  
The blind bat borne in circles dizzy,  
The crow—the lapwing—and the jay,  
Are wakeful all—all out and busy—  
See lizards in the green twigs tender,  
With heavy paunch and long legs slender—  
Everywhere strange sights we see—  
Are they what they seem to be ?—  
Here's many a twining plant that flings  
Round rock and root its serpent strings,  
And seeks to dart, in eager watch  
The heedless journeyer's foot to catch,  
From close-compacted living masses  
Its angry fangs on each who passes ;  
Everywhere around us playing,  
Many-coloured mice are straying,  
Numberless, 'mong moss and heather ;  
And the fire-flies crowd together,  
With buzzing motion, swarming, crushing,  
Round our meteor leader rushing !

We be strangers here who stray,  
Natives of the hills are they,  
Gleesome creatures bright and gay,  
Merry guides ! hurrah ! hurrah !—  
Wild the escort—wild the way !

Tell me, tell me, where we are—  
We have wandered fast and far—  
Is our wizard journey ended ?  
Is the Brocken yet ascended ?  
Round us everything seems wheeling,  
Trees are whirling, rocks are reeling—  
All in rapid circles spinning,  
With motion dizzying and dinning,



Everything that round us races  
Makes grotesque and fiendish faces ;  
Swelling, puffing, multiplying,  
On all sides wild-fire lights are flying.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Come, be alive—so far, so well ;  
We're at the half-way pinnacle.—  
The worst is over now—catch fast  
My mantle, while we turn and cast  
A glance beneath us on the mines  
Where MAMMON in the mountains shines !

FAUST. What a strange glimmer stains the ground,  
Like the dull heavy clouds around  
The east, ere yet the sun ascends :  
Far down the dusky hue extends,  
For leagues below earth's surface spread,  
A gloomy—thick—discoloured red,  
Tinging the dreary sides of this  
Desperate, hope-deadening precipice—  
Here rises smoke, there vaporous whiteness,  
But yonder what a blaze of brightness  
On every object round is gleaming !—  
Now in a narrow thread 'tis streaming,  
And now the illuminating current  
Bursts sparkling like a winter torrent,  
Here, round the vale, you see it wind,  
In long veins delicate and slender,  
And there in bondage strict confined,  
It brightens into burning splendour !  
A thousand sparks, like gold-dust, sprinkling  
The waste air, are before us twinkling,  
And see the tall rock kindling, brightening,  
Glow with intensity of lightning—  
Turret,—'twould seem—and fence and spire  
Lit up at once with festal fire.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Well, is not Mammon's princely  
hall

Lit gaily for our festival !

I'm glad you've seen it—the wild night  
Bodes storm, that soon will hide it quite—  
Already is it swept from sight—



Wild work is on the winds—I see already  
Omens that say the boisterous guests are coming.

FAUST. The angry gale blows insolently upon us !  
How keen and cold upon my neck it falls,  
Like strokes of some sharp weapon.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Firmly seize  
The old projections of the ribbed rock—  
Else it will blow you down into the chasm  
Yawning below us like a sepulchre.

Clouds frown heavily, and hearken  
How the wood groans as they darken,  
And the owls, in fear and fright  
At the stormy face of night,  
Beat the air in homeward flight ;  
The halls of evergreen are shaking,  
And their thousand pillars breaking,  
Hearken how the tempest wrenches  
Groaning trunks and crashing branches,  
And the earth beneath is rifted,  
And the shrieking trees uplifted—  
Bole, and bough, and blossom cheerful,  
Fair trees fall in ruin fearful ;  
—How the haughty forest brothers  
Bend and tremble !—how they fall !  
How they cling on one another's  
Arms !—each crushes each and smothers,  
Till, tangled, strangled, down come all ;  
And the wild Winds through the ruin  
Are howling, hissing, and hallooing !  
Down the valleys how they sweep,  
Round and round, above and under,  
Rend the giant cliffs asunder,  
And, with shout and scream appalling,  
Catch the mighty fragments falling !  
How they laugh, and how they leap,  
As they hurry off their plunder !  
Headlong steep, and gorges deep,  
Gulf, and glen, and rock, in wonder,  
Echo back the stormy thunder !



—List!—I thought I heard a ringing  
 In my ear of voices singing—  
 Above—around us—faint, now clearer,  
 Distant now—now warbling nearer—  
 Now, all the haunted hill along,  
 Streams the maddening magic song!

WITCHES IN CHORUS. On to the Brocken the witches  
 are flocking—

Merry meet—merry part—how they gallop and drive,  
 Yellow stubble and stalk are rocking,  
 And young green corn is merry alive,  
 With the shapes and shadows swimming by,  
 To the highest heights they fly,  
 Where Sir Urian sits on high—  
 Throughout and about,  
 With clamour and shout,  
 Drives the maddening rout,  
 Over stock, over stone;  
 Shriek, laughter, and moan,  
 Before them are blown.

A VOICE. Before the rest—beyond the best—  
 Who to lead the group is fitter?  
 In savage pride see Baubo ride  
 On her sow about to litter.

CHORUS. Baubo—honour to whom honour—  
 Benediction be upon her—  
 Forward, mother!—as we speed us,  
 Who so fit as thou to lead us!  
 Forward—clear the way before us!  
 Then follow we in screaming chorus!

A VOICE. Whence came you?

A VOICE.

Over Ilsenstein—

As I passed I peeped into a nest,  
 And the night-owl, scared from her stupid rest,  
 Fixed her frightened eyes on mine!

A VOICE. O go to the devil—why drive you so fast?

A VOICE. She grazed my side as she hurried  
 past,

And the skin is sore and the blast is chill:  
 Look there—see where—'tis bleeding still.



CHORUS OF WITCHES. The way is long, and weary,  
and wide—

And the madman throng crowds on every side—  
The pitchforks scratch, and the broomsticks scrape,  
Will the child within escape,  
When the mother, crushed to death,  
Suffocating pants for breath?

WIZARDS AND WARLOCKS. SEMICHORUS 1.

Like the lazy snail, we linger and trail:  
Our woman-kind, as fleet as the wind,  
Have left us far and far behind—  
On a road like this men droop and drivel,  
While woman goes fearless and fast to the devil.

WIZARDS AND WARLOCKS. SEMICHORUS 2.

Swift they go, and swift they go,  
And gain a thousand steps or so,  
But slow is swift, and swift is slow.  
Woman will bustle, and woman will justle,  
But yet at the end will lose the day,  
For hurry and hurry as best she may,  
Man at one long bound clears the way.

VOICES FROM ABOVE. Come with us—come with us  
from Felsen-see,  
From the lake of rocks to the eagle height  
Of the hills—come with us—to-night—to-night!

VOICES FROM BELOW. To wander above, is the thing  
we love.

Oh for one hour of this one night!  
For one mad dance on the Brocken height!  
When shall we join in the wild delight?  
We have washed, and washed, and washed us white  
Again and again—we are barren quite—  
But our hearts are aglow, our cheeks are bright—  
We have watched a-left—we have watched a-right,  
And we hear the sound of the far-off flight  
As they hurry away, and are swept from sight.

THE TWO CHORUSES. That wind that scattered the  
clouds is dead,



And they thicken soon o'er the wandering moon :  
 She hides her head—and the stars are fled ;—  
 With a whispering, whistling, drizzling sound,  
 And a fall of meteor fires around—  
 Onward, onward, hurry, skurry,  
 The hell-driven rout of wizards hurry.

VOICE FROM BELOW. Stop—stop—stop.

VOICE FROM ABOVE. What voice is this  
 Calls to us from the abyss ?  
 Seems it that the words just spoken  
 From the crannied rock have broken ?

VOICE FROM BELOW. | Stop—stop—stop—for me—  
 for me—

Guarded and bound with slant rocks round—  
 Stop—stop—stop—and make me free—  
 Three hundred years moiling, three hundred years  
 toiling,

Hurry work—weary work—step after step ;—  
 I grasp and I grope, and in time I have hope  
 To climb to the top—sisters, stop—sisters, stop—  
 I anoint every joint, and I pray my own prayer,  
 In the May-sabbath night, to the Prince of the air.—  
 Are you not my kindred ?—and why am I hind'ed  
 From mixing among you, and meeting him there ?

#### BOTH CHORUSES.

Brooms fly fast when warlocks ride 'em  
 Rams, with those who know to guide 'em ;  
 Broken branches gallop lightly ;  
 Pitchforks, too, make coursers sprightly.  
 A buck-goat or boar is as good as the best of them,  
 Each man for himself, and who cares for the rest of  
 them ?

Many an egg-shell air-balloon,  
 To-night will land at our saloon ;  
 He who fails in his endeavour  
 To join us now, is gone for ever.

HALF-WITCH FROM BELOW. Far away I hear their  
 laughter,



Hopelessly I stumble after ;  
 Cannot rest at home in quiet—  
 Here I cannot join the riot.

WITCHES IN CHORUS. Strength is given us by this  
 ointment—

We will keep to-night's appointment—  
 We can speed on sea, no matter  
 Were the sail a cobweb tatter ;  
 And a plank as weak and thin as  
 Snail's abandoned shell our pinnacle.  
 He who cannot fly to-night,  
 Will never soar a wizard's flight.

BOTH CHORUSES. And when we've reached the top-  
 most bound,

Like swallows skim the haunted ground ;  
 Far and wide upon the heath,  
 Spread your circling guard beneath ;  
 Watch and ward 'gainst treachery,  
 With all the hosts of witchery.

MEPHISTOPHELES. The air is heavy and oppressive,  
 And the whirling din excessive ;  
 Rattling with the ceaseless babble,  
 Of the tumultuous hell-driven rabble ;  
 Sultry, vaporous, and sickening ;  
 To a denser substance thickening,  
 Burning noisomely, and glittering  
 With fiery sparks for ever frittering,  
 Poisoning everything it reaches,  
 Atmosphere for fiends and witches.  
 But cling more close to me, or we will lose  
 Each other soon—where art thou ?

FAUST (*from a great distance*). Here I am !

MEPHISTOPHELES. What, lost already—torn away so  
 far—

Then must I show that I am master here !  
 Make way, good people, for my young friend yonder :—  
 Room for young VOLAND—room, sweet people, room.  
 Here, Doctor, cling to me, and with one spring  
 We'll rid ourselves of the whole set at once.  
 They are too bad—this raving is too much



Even for me.—Look yonder at the blaze  
Of brightness—a distinct and steady flame:  
How different from all the brimstone torches  
And wildfire lights that madden round the hill,—  
It tempts me to explore that distant copse—  
Come let us steal away from this wild crowd.

FAUST. Spirit of Contradiction—well, lead on!  
I cannot but admire the bright idea  
Of wandering to the Brocken in May-night,  
To enjoy, forsooth, the charms of solitude.

MEPHISTOPHELES. See, see the lights! how cheerily  
they burn!

There seems to be a merry set assembled,  
A little party met of choice gay spirits.

FAUST. Yet would I rather be above—see! see!  
Where through the whirls of smoke bursts the red light,  
And glows and triumphs—in what hurrying waves  
Numbers on numbers evermore increasing,  
The thickening throng streams onward—still—still  
onward—

All under the resistless fascination—  
All to the worship of the evil One—  
The clue to many a puzzling mystery  
May be found here—to-night will be unravelled  
Many a strange riddle.

MEPHISTOPHELES. And strange riddles, too,  
May be proposed to-night, and not unravelled—  
But leave we the great world and its distractions,  
While we enjoy our quiet corner here.  
'Tis quite established that, in all large parties,  
The guests divide in small and scattered circles—  
See the young witches all are naked there,  
And all the old ones with coy bashfulness,  
Veiling their timid charms—come, come, look pleasant,  
If it were only to oblige a friend—  
'Tis not much trouble, and we'll have rare sport.  
I hear the music—curse upon their scraping!—  
But 'twill sound better when we're used to it.  
Come, come, I must insist upon your coming—  
Come—I must introduce my honoured friend.



Well now, what think you? Is not this a long  
And splendid room? You scarce can see the end!  
A line of fires—at least a hundred, shine  
Brilliantly: what a scene of gaiety  
Of all kinds—chatting, dancing, drinking here—  
Cooking, and making love—can anything  
In the world be pleasanter?

FAUST.

In what character

Are we to know you—devil, or conjuror?

MEPHISTOPHELES. I travel, usually, *incognito*;  
But upon gala days the great display  
Their stars and orders.—I've no need to sport  
A garter—for the horse's foot is here  
In high repute.—See you that sliding snail?  
Eye—smell—touch—all gathered up into one?  
Hither she creeps—her trembling feelers out—  
Instinctively she knows that I am here,  
And touching—smelling—eyeing, on prowls she,  
Crowding herself together—wide awake—  
Out of her frozen sleep suddenly roused.  
Even if I wished disguise, it here would be  
A thing impossible—come, come with me.  
Forward from fire we saunter on to fire:  
Play you the lover where I introduce you.

[*As they pass on, MEPHISTOPHELES addresses a party sitting round a few dying embers.*]

Old gentlemen, pray, how do you get on  
In the corner here? Why—sure you ought to be  
Alive, and flirting in some merry circle.  
See, where the gay young girls are giggling, yonder,—  
If you are thus dull, you might have stayed at home.

GENERAL. Who may trust a people's favour,  
Though he fight for them for ever?  
To nations, as to girls ungrateful,  
The young are dear, the old are hateful.

EX-MINISTER. Little now to prize or praise;  
—Give me back the good old days,  
When kings and courts obeyed our call,  
And ourselves were all in all.

PARVENU. I was one of Fortune's pupils,



Disregarded doubts and scruples ;  
 Thus her golden gifts I found ;  
 Then, alas ! the wheel turned round.

AUTHOR. How public taste declines !—they never  
 Read works that once were counted clever ;  
 —And then the critics—all invidious—  
 Pert, prating, ignorant, fastidious !

MEPHISTOPHELES (*who has suddenly assumed the  
 appearance of extreme old age*). I feel the world is  
 waning into age ;

All things are ripening fast for the last day.  
 With feeble, tottering feet, for the last time,  
 I've climbed the witches' hill—the wine of life  
 Is low with me—and therefore 'tis that I,  
 An old man, think the world is on the lees.

HUCKSTER-WITCH. Who'll buy ? who'll buy ?—great  
 bargains going !

Rare things here to tempt the knowing !—  
 Stop and see them !—my collection  
 Well deserves minute inspection.

Such variety, in vain  
 Would you hope to meet again,  
 Of the curious articles,  
 Which your own old woman sells :  
 Rare and precious ! every one  
 Hath on earth its business done.  
 Will you have the dagger knife,  
 That hath drained a brother's life ?  
 Or the cup that held a draft,  
 Which was death to him that quaffed ?  
 —This was from a royal feast,  
 And a queen had drugged the bowl :  
 —This a chalice, and the priest,  
 —On him a confiding soul  
 Looked for comfort—poured in it  
 Venom of the aconite :  
 Here are trinkets—chain and gem—  
 Young man, you should purchase them—  
 Pearls, with which the wealthy donor  
 Won vain woman to dishonour.



Poor things ! poor things !—the best and kindest  
 Fall soonest, for their heart is blindest,  
 And feels, and loves, and does not reason—  
 And they are lost—poor things ! poor things !  
 —Here are swords, the gift of kings,  
 That have done the work of treason ;  
 Or pierced, some coward hand directing,  
 The sleeping or the unsuspecting.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Old lady, you mistake the times  
 we live in—

Every one's heart to novelty is given :  
 Throw out your box of relics—such antiques  
 As these no creature fancies now or seeks.  
 The past is dead and gone—the present passion  
 Is novelty—this trash is out of fashion.

FAUST. Scarce know I who I am or where—  
 They crowd and rush as at a fair.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Forward the whirling crowd is  
 striving,

All driven along the stream and driving,  
 All rushing on in one direction,  
 And each enjoying the reflection  
 That he to-night is his own sovereign,  
 That his own thoughts his movements govern,  
 Unconscious that the same broad river  
 Bears down its wave each self-deceiver.

FAUST. Who's that ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Her features closely scan—  
 'Tis the first wife of the first man.

FAUST. Who, say you ?

MEPHISTOPHELES. ADAM'S first wife, LILITH  
 Beware—beware of her bright hair,  
 And the strange dress that glitters there :  
 Many a young man she beguileth,  
 Smiles winningly on youthful faces,  
 But woe to him whom she embraces !

FAUST (*looking at another group*). The old grey witch  
 —how she squats down—poor devil !  
 Panting for breath—half-dead—fainting and flounder-  
 ing—



And the young vixen with her finds the revel  
 Rather too much for her—she, too, is foundering.  
 MEPHISTOPHELES. Nonsense, the fun will ne'er be  
 over.

Advance, my friend, and play the lover.  
 Look, man, the girl's well worth the winning—  
 Come, join the dances just beginning.

[FAUST and MEPHISTOPHELES take partners.  
 FAUST (*dancing with the young witch*). 'Twas my  
 fortune once to see

In a dream an apple-tree;  
 Rosy apples—one, two, three—  
 With a glad smile tempted me;  
 And to-night again I seem,  
 In the trance of that sweet dream,  
 Lovely is the tree I wis,  
 And the apple pleasant is.

HIS PARTNER. Dear little apples—aye! their price  
 Was more than gold in paradise—  
 And pleasant to the sight and touch:  
 I come from gardens rich in such.

MEPHISTOPHELES (*with the old witch*). I had a troubled  
 dream, and it  
 Was haggard as a night-mare fit.  
 I saw an old tree torn and split,  
 And yet it pleased me, I admit.

HIS PARTNER. With lowest courtesy I salute  
 The gay knight of the Horse's Foot:  
 The tree of knowledge, trunk and root,  
 Is his—and his must be the fruit.

PROCTOPHANTASMIST. Cursed devils—how they  
 murder

All attempts at keeping order:  
 All in vain it is to prove  
 To Spirits by what laws they move:—  
 Mocking at all regulation,  
 Ridiculing demonstration,  
 See them onward still advancing,  
 Ghosts! like men and women dancing.

FAUST'S PARTNER. Who's this presumes to interfere?



What means the forward fellow here ?

FAUST. What—he ?—why he is everywhere—  
He never dances—but he guides  
Opinion—disapproves—decides—  
On carriage and the true division  
Of time gives laws with calm precision.  
While others *dance* he *criticizes*,  
And all is perfect that he prizes ;  
And what he does not prate about  
Is but of small account, no doubt :  
Nay, such his wondrous powers of seeing,  
What he beholds not has no being :  
Our careless grouping must perplex him,  
But dancing forward's sure to vex him.  
The only figures he approves  
Are where the set in circles moves,  
Still turning his own humdrum round  
Within the same contracted bound,  
Holding, at times, grave consultation,  
Listening to him with veneration,  
As he with magisterial rigour  
Commands a change of tune and figure.

PROCTOPHANTASMIST. Still here ! defying me ! this  
rabble

Of rude ghosts !—'tis intolerable !—  
What ! restlessly still thronging hither ?  
Vanish from my sight—fade—wither—  
How can men say that spectres haunt 'em ?  
—The mind, does it not make the phantom ?  
Who and what are they ?—mere relations  
That we may see or not at pleasure—  
And here they come and—grant me patience—  
Mix in the dance—converse at leisure.  
I thought, that, by my labours brightened,  
The world for this was too enlightened.  
These devils—they rise, and in derision  
Of all I say, still cross my vision.  
What—beings, that have no existence,  
To mock each law of time and distance !  
Why, after this, the TEGEL ghost



May grin again at his old post.  
 I thought I'd swept away these fancies  
 Of plays, and poems, and romances!  
 Still here! with all the noise of Babel,  
 These dreams of a forgotten fable!

FAUST'S PARTNER. Silence, silence, old intruder!

PROCTOPHANTASMIST. What! the ghosts are growing  
 ruder—

How they beard me, in defiance  
 Of every inference of science!  
 Fiends, I tell you to your faces,  
 I will make you know your places!  
 What! in public thus to fool us!  
 A mob of ghosts, forsooth, to rule us!

*[The dancing goes on.]*

To-night—why this is Goblin-hall,  
 Spirits and spectres all in all.  
 My comments—what are they?—the cavils,  
 Of a sour cynic on his travels,  
 A passing stranger's jealous spite.  
 —But Time will set the matter right,  
 Good sense assert its proper power,  
 Dethrone the tyrant of the hour,  
 And take revenge on my tormentors,  
*Goblins, and ghosts, and ghost-inventors!*

MEPHISTOPHELES. He'll throw himself into a puddle:  
 There will he, stupefying, muddle,  
 Till leeches, clinging to his body,  
 Are weary of their banquet bloody:  
 For spirits sinking—spirits rising  
 The one cure is phlebotomizing;  
 Delusions vanish soon—the leech  
 Diseases of the head can reach  
 And cure them—biting on the breech.—  
 Blue devils fade fast, and, disappearing,  
 Smile on the sage with aspect cheering.  
 The brain will thus correct and clear its  
 Vague whims, and vexing thoughts of spirits.  
 —Why have you quitted thus already  
 Your sweet and captivating lady,



Who sang so lovingly and well,  
And danced so——

FAUST. Why, I fear to tell ;  
But from her mouth, while she was singing,  
I saw a little red mouse springing.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Why start at trifles, my good  
fellow ?

'Tis well it was not grey or yellow.  
What can these dull suspicions profit ?  
The mouse—why make a mountain of it ?  
A pretty sort of reason this is  
To fly a loving lady's kisses.

FAUST. And then I saw——

MEPHISTOPHELES. What ?

FAUST. Look, Mephisto, there,  
See you far off, and shadow-like, a fair  
Pale form—a lovely girl—almost a child—  
Standing alone—with sweet eyes, sad and mild ?  
She looks on us—she moves—she leaves the place—  
Her feet are bound—she slides with mournful pace.  
I cannot from my heart dispel the wild,  
Strange thought, that her's is my own Margaret's  
face.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Repel that thought ; 'tis but an  
idle trick

Of heated fancy, and the form you see  
Is nothing but a magic mockery.  
To gaze on it most dangerous may be.  
Charmed by its marble stare, the blood grows thick  
And hardens into marble ; but ere now  
You must have heard of pale MEDUSA's brow.

FAUST. Ah, no ! a corpse's eyes are those  
Whose lids no loving fingers close.  
'Tis she—that form—that face—that breast  
So often to my bosom prest.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Fool ! 'tis delusion ! every lover  
Would there his charmer's looks discover.

FAUST. What mirth is here—and, oh ! what grief—  
my glance  
Still—still returns to that pale countenance ;



And see around her neck a slender chain,  
That stripes the snowy skin with crimson stain :  
Scarce broader than a knife's thin edge it seems—  
A strangely chosen ornament it seems.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Yes, you are right ; for I can see  
it too,

—But think no more of it than others do.  
Be not surprised, if you should see her carry  
Her head under her arm—'twere like enough ;  
For since the day that PERSEUS cut it off,  
Such things are not at all extraordinary.  
But see, all others here are pleasant ;  
Cease moping, and enjoy the present :  
All round the hill is merriment—  
Try thou the same experiment.  
Never did crowded capital  
A gayer throng together call ;  
And if my senses do not err,  
Yonder 's an open theatre.  
—Well, what 's your business ?

SERVIBILIS. We are just beginning—

'Tis a new piece—the last of seven—seven is  
The customary number here—'twas written  
By a young amateur of fancy—the actors  
Are dilettanti all—your pardon, gentlemen,  
But I must vanish—I'm an amateur  
Myself—and for this one night draw the curtain.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Blocksberg for ever!—not a  
player

On earth but merits to be there !



## WALPURGIS NIGHT'S DREAM ;

OR,

THE GOLDEN BRIDAL OF OBERON AND TITANIA.

AN INTERLUDE.

MANAGER

To-day our trouble is but small,  
 No need of nice machinery ;  
 A valley moist and hill are all  
 The necessary scenery.

HERALD

'Mong mortals with the fiftieth year  
 Of wedlock comes the Golden Feast—  
 A happier feast of gold is here  
 Commemorating discord ceast.

OBERON

Subject spirits, crowd the scene,  
 Celebrate, with exultation,  
 The union of your king and queen,  
 This happy reconciliation.

PUCK

Here comes Puck—you'll always find me  
 Circling in the merry dance,  
 And a hundred more behind me  
 Twinkling joyous feet advance.

ARIEL

Sweet, heavenly sweet is Ariel's song  
 What a crowd of hideous features  
 The music wins, and what a throng  
 Follows me of lovely creatures !



## OBERON

Men and wives who would agree,  
We invite your imitation ;  
The only certain recipe  
For dying love is separation.

## TITANIA

If wife be cross, and husband fuming,  
To make them know each other's worth,  
To the South Pole take the woman,  
And her husband to the North.

## THE WHOLE ORCHESTRA

Insect swarms, in murmuring flight,  
Our musicians of the night,  
Fly, and gnat, and bee, and beetle,  
Ply mouth, nose, and winglet little,  
Crickets, chirping, 'mong the bushes,  
And hoarse frogs croaking from the rushes.

## SOLO

Hear the drowsy bagpipe groan,  
The bag's a soap-blown bubble airy,  
And grumbling through the winding drone  
Come sullen sounds extraordinary.

## EMBRYO SPIRIT

Spider's foot and lizard's belly,  
And winglets for the embryo !  
The animated lump of jelly  
Writes verses of the smoothest flow.

## PARTNERS DANCING

Little steps—light, springy leaps  
Through honey-dew and field-flowers fragrant ;  
How pleasant, but that something keeps  
From fields of air the willing vagrant !



## INQUISITIVE TRAVELLER

A thousand figures here burlesque  
A masquerade's wild gaiety,  
And mingling with the groups grotesque,  
See Oberon the little deity.

## ORTHODOX DIVINE

What! without claws—without a tail!  
Yet all whose thoughts are sober on  
Such serious subjects know too well  
The 'GODS OF GREECE' and OBERON.

## ARTIST FROM THE NORTH

As yet my works are sketches merely,  
Though you'll admit done prettily,  
But I've made my arrangements nearly  
For travelling in Italy.

## FORMALIST

What sinful, riotous excesses!  
Fool that I was to join the crowd here—  
Such shockingly indecent dresses!  
And but a witch in two wears powder!

## YOUNG WITCH

Keep powder, patch, and petticoat  
For grey-haired hags—skins smeared and sooty—  
While I sit fearless on my goat  
In the free pride of naked beauty.

## MATRON

For scolding we've too much politeness—  
Sneers like this are best forgotten.  
Rosy cheek, and soft neck's whiteness,  
May they soon be coarse and rotten!

## LEADER OF THE BAND

Insect-harpers, as you wander  
Round the hall in many a ringlet,



Spare the naked beauty yonder  
 Wound of sting, or touch of winglet.  
 Grasshoppers from the green bushes,  
 Brown frogs croaking from the rushes,  
 Brave musicians for the night,  
 Watch that the tune and time go right.

WEATHERCOCK (*pointing in one direction*)

Well, what a brilliant company !  
 The girls how fair and unaffected !  
 And not a man but seems to be  
 For beauty from mankind selected !

WEATHERCOCK (*pointing in the opposite direction*)

What devils all ! unless the ground  
 Should cleave asunder to receive them,  
 I'll fly from this place, with one bound,  
 To hell, or anywhere, to leave 'em.

XENIEN

Small as insects, here we bring  
 Our little shears ; the crops we gather  
 Will be a grateful offering  
 To Satan, our liege lord and father !

HENNINGS

What merry groups are crowding there !  
 Up to every frolic started ;  
 And when they're gone—I won't say where—  
 We call them foolish, but good-hearted.

MUSAGET

Oh happy, happy bard ! whom chance  
 To such a circle introduces,  
 With these I'd rather lead the dance  
 Than be Apollo with the muses.

|| GENIUS OF THE OLD TIMES

Come, follow me through smooth and rough :  
 Cling close—there's little need of ceremony.



On Blocksberg we'll find room enough,  
The wide Parnassus 'tis of Germany.

## INQUISITIVE TRAVELLER

What's yonder pompous fellow's name?  
With long and solemn strides he's pacing,  
And, like a dog that snuffs the game,  
The Jesuits, methinks, he's tracing.

## CRANE

I seek my prey in waters clear,  
I seek it in the troubled rivers;  
This scene is my delight, for here  
Are devils mixed with true believers.

## WORLDLING

For true believers everything  
Works good in ways all unexpected;  
With hymns the Blocksberg rocks shall ring  
From many a convent here erected.

## DANCER

Is this another company,  
With trumpets sounding—banners glittering?  
No; 'tis the boreal lights I see:  
From marshes hear the booming bittern.

## DANCING-MASTER

Devils—how they fling and jump—  
Through the figure flounce and scuffle;  
Spite of wooden leg and hump,  
How they caper, cut, and shuffle!

## FIDDLER

Hatred in every heart! the tone  
Of Orpheus' lyre, with charm celestial,  
Soothed brutes; to-night the bagpipe's drone  
Tames into peace the blind and bestial!



## DOGMATIST

Well, I'll maintain it—spite of sneer,  
 Or argument, or gibe uncivil—  
 I see a thousand devils here,  
 Which proves the being of a devil.

## IDEALIST

Imagination's power to-night  
 For my sensorium too intense is ;  
 If I be all that meets my sight,  
 Then surely I have lost my senses.

## REALIST

Reality . . . is torturing me ;  
 I'm wearied with this scene of wonder ;  
 The ground—it seems the ground to be—  
 Gives way my tottering feet from under.

## SUPERNATURALIST

Here, for my system, as I rove,  
 Delighted I derive assistance ;  
 If there be devils, it must prove  
 Of angels also the existence.

## SCEPTIC

Misled they follow fairy rays,  
 That promise gold with gay delusion :  
 DEVIL and DOUBT, the proverb says,  
 And both increase to-night's confusion.

## LEADER OF THE BAND

Grasshopper among the bushes,  
 Brown frog croaking from the rushes,  
 Hell and all its devils haunt ye,  
 Good-for-nothing dilettanti—  
 Pretty sort of harmony,  
 Nose of gnat and snout of fly.



## SHREWD FELLOWS

Call us *Sans-souci*—for you know  
That each of us, a gay philosopher,  
If on his feet he cannot go,  
Walks on his head, nor fears a toss over.

## AWKWARD CLUMSY CREATURES

Oh once, Heaven help us! we could dance:  
How pompously we then did swagger!  
Now shoes out-worn, and sore feet torn,  
Along the course we faintly stagger.

## WILL-O'-THE-WISPS

From the sink and slough we come,  
From the hole of steaming nitre;  
And yet, in all this dazzling room,  
Shine there sparks more gay or brighter?

## FALLING STAR

Rapidly I shot from high,  
With fiery course in brightness starry;  
Here broken on the grass I lie,  
With none to help me, none to carry.

## HEAVY BODIES

Places—places—round go we—  
Where we dance how bare the sod is;  
Spirits move, and all may see  
Spirits have substantial bodies.

## PUCK

Like awkward elephants they thump  
The ground with clumsy hoofs and heavy;  
Strange shadows! Puck alone is plump,  
The sleekest spirit at the levee.

## ARIEL

If wings be yours—boon Nature's gift—  
And if the spirit so disposes,



Then follow Ariel—follow swift—  
Your guide to yonder hill of roses.

ORCHESTRA (*pianissimo*)

Daylight!—the cloud-built stage—the wreaths  
Of vapour,—where are they?  
On reed and rush the free air breathes,  
And sweeps the dream away.

### A GLOOMY DAY.—A PLAIN

FAUST. In misery—in despair—long wandering in wretchedness over the wide world; and now taken up—shut up in the prison as a malefactor—this gentle, unhappy creature—for horrid tortures. To this—and has it come to this? Treacherous, worthless Spirit! and this hast thou been concealing from me! Stand, there, stand! Aye! roll the devil eyes furiously round in thy head—aye! stand and defy me with thy insupportable presence. Taken up—in distress irretrievable—given over to evil spirits—abandoned to—man—man that passes judgement, and is devoid of feeling; and all this, while you have been lulling and rocking me and deluding me among loathsome dissipations, and hiding from me her continually increasing wretchedness, and have left her to perish without help!

MEPHISTOPHELES. She is not the first!

FAUST. Dog! abhorred monster! turn him, oh, thou infinite Spirit, turn the reptile again into his dog's shape, in which it was often his pleasure to scamper before me by night, to roll before the feet of the unthinking passer-by, and as he fell to fasten on his shoulders. Turn him again into his darling shape, that he may crouch upon his belly before me in the sand, and that I may trample upon him with my foot—the outcast! Not the first! Misery—misery—by no human soul is it to be fathomed how more than one creature should



have sunk into the depths of this distress—that the first should not have suffered enough in her agonizing tortures to secure the atonement of all the rest before the eyes of the All-merciful! I feel marrow and life harrowed up by the misery of this one—only this one! thou art grinning calmly over the fate of thousands!

MEPHISTOPHELES. At our wits' end we are again, it would seem, already—just where you mortals find the overstrained faculties snap. Why seek our society, if you cannot go through with it? Think of flying, and yet art not proof against dizziness! Did we force ourselves upon thee? or thou thyself upon us?

FAUST. Show not thy thirsty teeth thus defyingly—I loathe thee. Great, glorious Spirit! thou who didst deign to appear to me, thou who knowest my very heart and soul, why hast thou chained me with this companion who feeds on mischief, and battens on destruction?

MEPHISTOPHELES. Are you done?

FAUST. Save her, or woe to thee! The most horrible curse on thee for thousands of years.

MEPHISTOPHELES. I cannot loosen the avenger's fetters—I cannot open his bolts. Save her! Who was it that threw her into ruin—I or thou?

[FAUST looks wildly around.

Art thou grasping for the thunder? Well, that it has not been given to you wretched mortals! To dash to pieces one who stands in your way, however innocent—that is just the tyrant's way of rescuing himself in every perplexity.

FAUST. Take me thither—she shall be free!

MEPHISTOPHELES. The danger to which you expose yourself—have you thought of that? The guilt of blood shed by your hand still lies on the town. Over the place where the murder was committed avenging spirits are hovering and watching for the returning murderer.

FAUST. That, too, and from thee? Murder and death of a world upon thee, monster! Take me thither, I say, and set her at liberty.



MEPHISTOPHELES. I will,—and all I can do I will. What that all is, listen till I tell you. Have I all power in heaven and on earth? I will cloud the gaoler's senses. Do you possess yourself of the keys, and carry her off with human hand. Meanwhile I watch; the magic horses are ready, and I take you away. This much I can do.

FAUST. Up and away!

### NIGHT.—OPEN PLAIN

FAUST and MEPHISTOPHELES *rushing along on black horses.*

FAUST. What are the figures near the gibbet doing? Weaving, 'twould seem!

MEPHISTOPHELES. No—rather boiling, brewing Some filthy broth—mumbling some incantation.

FAUST. East they move, and west they move—now kneel, now bend down in prostration.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Witches worshipping their master.

FAUST. They scatter something on the earth, and now seem pouring a libation—  
They sprinkle something in the air.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Forward! forward! — faster!  
faster!

### PRISON

FAUST (*with a bunch of keys and a lamp, before an iron wicket*). 'Tis many a day since I have trembled thus.

Misery on misery heaped—a heavy burden,  
More than man can endure, has weighed me down.  
And here within these damp walls doth she live,



And is to die because she was deluded—  
 To die for that her brain was wild and frenzied.  
 And thou dost hesitate to go to her!  
 Dost fear to look upon that face again!  
 Onward, irresolute!—this wavering  
 Delays not death.

*[He takes hold of the lock.—Singing from within.]*

## SONG

*My mother! my mother!  
 The wanton woman—My mother hath slain me.  
 My father, inhuman, For supper hath ta'en me—  
 My little sister hath, one by one,  
 Laid together each small white bone,  
 'Mong almond blossoms to sleep in the cool;  
 And I woke me a wood-bird beautiful.  
 Fly away, fly away, all the long summer-day,  
 Little bird of the woods, fly away! fly away!*

FAUST (*opening the wicket*). She feels not that her  
 love is listening—  
 Hear the chains, as they clank, and the straw rustling.  
*[He enters.]*

MARGARET (*hiding her face in the straw of her bed*).  
 Woe! woe! they come! they come!—death,  
 bitter death!

FAUST (*in a low voice*). Hush! hush! 'tis I who come  
 to rescue thee!

MARGARET (*rolling herself at his feet*). Art thou a man?  
 Have pity upon me.

FAUST. Hush! hush! these screams and shrieks  
 will wake the keepers.

*[He takes hold of the chains to unlock them.]*

MARGARET (*throwing herself on her knees to him*).

|| *Savage*, who gave this cruel power to thee?

It is not more than midnight now—have mercy!

Is it too long a time to wait till morn?

*[She stands up.]*

And I am still so young—so very young!

And must I die so soon?—and I was fair—



And I was fair, and that was my undoing.  
 Oh, if my love were here—but he is gone—  
 Torn is my garland—scattered all its flowers—  
 Oh, do not grasp me with such violence—  
 Ah, spare me! sure I have not injured thee:  
 Let me not weep and pray to thee in vain!  
 Spare me—I never saw thy face before.

FAUST. I must—I must endure this misery!

MARGARET. I know that I am wholly in thy power—  
 Only permit me first to give my breast  
 To this poor child of mine: all the long night  
 I hugged it to my heart, they took it from me;  
 They took away my child to torture me,  
 And now they say that I have murdered it,  
 And never never more shall I be happy:  
 And they sing songs about me—*'twas ill done*;  
*It was ill done*—so the old ballad runs.  
 Who told them I was meant in it?

FAUST (*throws himself down*). A lover, Margaret, lies  
 at thy feet;

He comes to undo these bonds—unloose these fetters.

MARGARET (*throws herself beside him*). Let us kneel  
 down, and call upon the saints.

See! see! beneath us hell boils up—the devil  
 Is raving there below in hideous din!

FAUST (*aloud*). Margaret—Margaret.

MARGARET (*with eager attention*). That is my love's  
 voice.

[*Springs up—her irons fall off.*

Where is he?—Where?—I heard my own love's voice!

Now am I free, none, none shall keep me from him.

I'll clasp his neck, will lean upon his bosom;

I heard him call,—he's standing on the threshold,—

I heard him call the name of Margaret;—

Amid the noises and the howls of hell,

And threats, and taunts, and laughs of devilish scorn,

I heard my own love's voice—his loving voice!

FAUST. 'Tis I.

MARGARET. 'Tis thou!—oh, tell me so once more!

[*Presses him to her bosom.*



'Tis he, 'tis he—my pangs, where are they now ?  
 Dungeon, and chains, and scaffold, where are they ?  
 'Tis thou, and thou hast come to rescue me.  
 I am already free: look—there's the street  
 Where we first met—where first I saw my love—  
 And yonder is the cheerful garden, smiling,  
 Where I and Martha waited to receive thee.

FAUST (*striving to take her away*). Come, come with me.

MARGARET. Oh, stay a little while—  
 Some moments more—I love to stay with thee !  
*[Caressing him.]*

FAUST. Haste—haste—a moment lost we dearly rue it.

MARGARET. So short a time away from me, my love,

Already hast forgotten how to kiss !

Why do I feel so sad upon your neck ?

Time was all heaven was pressing down upon me

In all thy words,—in every look of thine,

Yes, very heaven,—and then, then you did kiss me

As if you would smother me with your kisses !

Kiss me—now kiss me, love—or I kiss thee !

*[She embraces him.]*

Ah me ! your lips are cold—are dumb—are dead—

Where are my kisses, where ? with whom have you left them ?

Where is my love ? who robbed me of your love ?

*[Turns from him.]*

FAUST. Come, come—take courage, follow me, my love.

I love thee with unutterable love ;

But follow me,—this one—this one request.

MARGARET (*turning to him*). And is it thou, and is it thou indeed ?

FAUST. Yes, yes ! But come !

MARGARET. And do you break my chains !

And do you take me to your heart again !

How is it you do not shudder at my sight ?

And knowest thou whom thou art delivering ?



FAUST. Come!—the deep night is fading fast away.

MARGARET. My mother, I have murdered her—my child,

I drowned my child—Oh was it not a gift  
To thee and me?—yes thee! yes, thine! and thou  
art here,

I scarcely can believe it is thyself.

Give me thy hand—it is not then a dream;

Thine own dear hand. Oh, God! his hand is moist—

Wipe, wipe it off! methought it felt like blood!

What hast thou done? Put up the bloody sword;

I pray thee do.

FAUST. Oh think not of the past;

That which is done, is done. You are killing me.

MARGARET. No, you must live. No, you have to  
remain,

I will describe to you the graves which you

To-morrow must see made; the best place give

To my poor mother—near her lay my brother—

And by their side, a little space away,

But not too far from them must be my place—

And lay the little one on my right breast:

No other will lie with me in that bed!

To nestle down in quiet side by side

To thee—oh what a happy thing it was—

A happy thing that never more can be.

I feel as if I forced myself on thee,

And that thou wert repelling my embrace;

And yet thou art the same—and yet thy looks

Are good and kind, as they have ever been.

FAUST. Oh, if thou feelest that 'tis I, come, come.

MARGARET. What? out there?

FAUST. Yes! out into the free air.

MARGARET. Aye, to the grave—does not death lurk  
without?

Come to the bed of everlasting rest—

Yes, yes—that's all—that's all—not a step farther—

Are you going, Henry? may I go with you?

FAUST. Come, come; the gates are open, only come.

MARGARET. I dare not go; there is no help for me.



What good is it to fly? My steps are watched.  
 It is a hard thing to be forced to beg,  
 And harder, harassed by an evil conscience.  
 'Tis hard to wander in a foreign land,  
 And then, whate'er I do, at last they'll seize me.

FAUST. I will be with thee.

MARGARET (*wildly*).

Fly, fly,  
 Save thy poor child;  
 Away to the road,  
 By the side of the stream,  
 And across the path  
 That leads to the wood;  
 Then turn to the left,  
 And over the plank,  
 It lies in the pond.  
 Loiter not, linger not.  
 Still does it stir  
 With the motion of life.  
 'The little hands struggle  
 More faintly and faintly,  
 Rescue! Oh rescue!

FAUST. Recall thy wandering mind—be calm! be calm!

One step, and you are free.

MARGARET. Oh, that we had but left that hill behind!

See there, my mother sitting on a stone—  
 Icy-cold comes a dead hand on my temples.  
 My mother there is sitting on a stone,  
 And her grey head is trembling, and her eyes  
 Close, and she now has ceased to nod; her head  
 Looks heavy, and she sleeps too long—too long—  
 Oh, when she sank to sleep how blest we were!

• It was a happy time!

FAUST. She listens not;  
 Words have no weight with her. There is no way,  
 But forcibly to bear thee hence.



MARGARET. Touch me not ; no, I will not suffer violence :

Seize me not with that murderer's grasp ; whate'er I did was done for thee, my love. I did Everything my love asked me, willingly.

FAUST. Day dawns—oh, hasten hence, my love ! my love !

MARGARET. Day ! yes, 'tis day, the last, the judgement-day ;

My bridal-day it should have been ; tell none That thou hast been with poor weak Margaret.

Alas ! my garland is already withered ; We'll meet again, but not at dances, love :

The crowd is gathering tumultuously,  
The square and street are thronged with crushing thousands ;

The bell hath sounded ; the death-wand is broken ;

They bind and blindfold me, and force me on :

On to the scaffold they have hurried me ;

Down in the chair of blood they fasten me :

And now, through every neck of all that multitude

Is felt the bitter wound that severs mine.

The world is now as silent as the grave !

FAUST. Oh, that I never had been born !

MEPHISTOPHELES (*appears at the door*). Away, or you are lost ;

This trembling, and delay, and idle chattering,

Will be your ruin ; hence, or you are lost ;

My horses shiver in the chilling breeze

Of the grey morning.

MARGARET. What shape is that which rises from the earth ?

'Tis he, 'tis he, oh, send him from this place ;

What wants he here ? Oh, what can bring him here ?

Why does he tread on consecrated ground ?

He comes for me.

FAUST. Oh, thou shalt live, my love.

MARGARET. Upon the judgement-throne of God,  
I call ;

On God I call in humble supplication.



MEPHISTOPHELES (*to FAUST*). Come, or I leave thee here to share her fate.

MARGARET. Father of heaven, have mercy on thy child.

Ye angels, holy hosts, keep watch around me.

Henry—I am afraid to look at thee.

MEPHISTOPHELES. Come—she is judged!

VOICE (*from above*).

Is saved.

MEPHISTOPHELES (*to FAUST*).

Hither to me!

[*Disappears with FAUST.*

VOICE (*from within, dying away*). Henry! Henry!

THE END



OXFORD : HORACE HART  
PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY



# **NOTES**

**BY C. B. WHEELER, M.A.**







# NOTES

## DOCTOR FAUSTUS

PAGE 3. 4. *Thrasimene*: at Lake Trasimenus, in the north of Italy, Hannibal gained a decisive victory over the Roman army led by the consul Flaminius in 217 B.C. The consul was slain and fifteen thousand Italians are said to have fallen on the field of battle. There is no doubt a reference to some old play, but no editor has been able to find it.

5. *mate*: there are two verbs 'to mate' in English, (1) from the O. Fr. *mater*, meaning to defeat, which is seen in the word 'checkmate', (2) from the substantive 'mate', meaning to equal, rival. Both were in use in the sixteenth century. If, as *N. E. D.* supposes, Marlowe intended the former word, his history was at fault; but this is more probable than that he should have said, 'The god of war proved as good a fighter as the Carthaginians', if he meant, the Carthaginians proved as good fighters as the god of war.

7. This line is to be taken with the preceding line, the stop at the end of which is a comma in the 1604 and other early editions, as well as in the editions of Dyce, Bullen, and other editors. The substitution of a semicolon after 'love' obscures the sense.

9. *vaunt*: the correction of the 1616 quarto for the 'daunt' of the two earlier editions.

*his*: Muse is generally regarded as feminine, except where, as in *Lycidas*, 19-21, it stands for 'poet'; that it can hardly do here, for Marlowe could not have termed himself 'our poet'. It is probably enough to say that he changed the Muse's gender to fit his own sex.

10. *perform The form*: offer a representation.



12. *appeal our plaud*: refer the question of the applause due to our performance. To 'appeal' a matter is to refer it to a higher tribunal.

15. *Rhodes*: Roda, in Saxe-Altenburg, about twenty miles east-south-east of Weimar. For the historical Dr. Faust, see Introduction, p. xii.

16. *Wittenberg*, on the Elbe, about fifty-five miles south-west of Berlin, was long the chief town of Saxony; its University was founded in 1502. Shakespeare tells us that Hamlet went 'to school in Wittenberg' (*Hamlet*, i. ii. 113). Here, and wherever else the name occurs in the play, the two earliest quartos, 1604 and 1609, have Wertenberg, or -berge. Wittenberg is given in 1616 and subsequently.

17. *Whereas*: not uncommon in Elizabethan drama for 'where'; cf. *2 Hen. VI*, i. ii. 57, 'to ride unto Saint Alban's, Whereas the king and queen do mean to hawk'.

19. *The fruitful plot of scholarism graced*: an absolute clause, 'when he had adorned the rich field of scholarship'.

21. *whose sweet delight disputes*: there is either a confusion of thought here or a corruption of text; it was their delight to dispute, but it was their intellect and not their delight which disputed. The emendation, 'whose sweet disputes delight', is, as Dr. Ward says, 'very seductive'. If the text stands, 'is' may be understood after 'delight', but such an omission seems very harsh.

23. *cunning* is a word which has seen better days. Its earlier meaning, retained here, is 'knowledge', without any suggestion of underhand dealing; cf. 'Let my right hand forget her cunning', Psalm cxxxvii. 5.

*of a self-conceit*: through an exaggerated estimate of his own ability. For *of* = because of; cf. 'to die of grief', &c.

24. *His waxen wings*: a reference to the tale of Icarus, who flew too near the sun in his flight from Crete, and falling gave his name to the Icarian Sea.



His wings were of feathers, attached to his body by wax, which is probably what Marlowe meant.

25. *melting*: an absolute clause with the subject omitted, 'when they melted'.

27. *now*: the 1616 correction for 'more' of the earlier quartos.

## SCENE I

PAGE 4. 5. *commenc'd*: the regular term for taking the degree of Master or Doctor in any faculty at the University. The phrase 'to commence M.A.' was formerly common.

*be a divine in show &c.*: while professedly a student of theology, aim at attaining to the basis of all knowledge.

7. *Aristotle's works*: like Bacon, Aristotle seemed to have taken all knowledge for his inheritance; logic, metaphysics, ethics, natural science, poetry, rhetoric, politics—on all these he said what the schoolmen of the Middle Ages believed to be the last word. The tyranny his works exercised over the minds of students hardly abated till the revival of learning and the revolt which found its extreme expression in Peter Ramus's thesis (1536), that 'everything that Aristotle taught is false'. The treatises entitled *Analytics*, termed *Prior* and *Posterior*, form the basis, and a good deal of the superstructure, of traditional logic. *Analytics* is here taken as singular, like *Ethics* and *Politics*, &c.; the Latin *analytica*, *ethica*, *politica*, are sometimes neuter plural and sometimes feminine singular agreeing with *scientia* or *ars*.

9. *Bene disserere* &c.: 'the end of logic is to argue well'. This does not appear to be the translation of any sentence of Aristotle.

14. *Economy*: this, the reading of the second quarto, in its literal and primitive sense means 'the management of a house', which here makes nonsense. The 1604 quarto has 'Oncaymaeon', which, being unintelligible to the early printers, was changed to the reading in the text. It was left to the sagacity of Mr. Bullen to discover that the original reading was a transliteration



of the Aristotelian phrase *ὄν καὶ μὴ ὄν*, 'being and not being'—a masterly and convincing conjecture which fully warrants the restoration of the original reading, with which the 'and' (not found in the 1604 quarto) may be omitted.

*Galen*: a celebrated Greek physician, born about A.D. 130; he was long regarded as the supreme authority in medicine, on the strength of the five hundred treatises which he is said to have written on the subject. At least eighty which are considered genuine have survived to the present day.

15. *Ubi desinit* &c.: 'the doctor begins where the philosopher leaves off'; 'philosopher' is used in the sense of student of natural philosophy, or investigator of nature. Aristotle (*de Sensu*, ch. 1, and *de Resp.*, ch. 21) says that the best students of physics—in which he included physiology—complete their works with a dissertation on 'medicine' (including what we call pathology), and the best physicians (pathologists) begin, or take their first principles, from physiology.

18. *Summum bonum* &c.: 'the supreme good of medicine is health'. Latin translations of Aristotle, *Nic. Ethics*, i. 1. 3, cited by Dr. Ward, have '*medicinae finis est sanitas*'; Marlowe, or some book he had read, altered this (or an equivalent) into '*summum bonum*' &c.

21. *found*: pronounced to be; cf. 'to find guilty'. The first two quartos have 'sound', which can hardly stand.

22. *bills*: prescriptions; cf. 'After the billes made by the greate physicion God, prescrybynge the medicines hymselfe', More, *Comf. agt. Trib.* I (1529).

26. *Couldst thou make men*: the early quartos have 'Wouldst thou make man'—the first word a palpable error which is corrected in 1616; but 'man', though also there corrected, may well be right, though the 'them' of the next line jars with it.

29. *Justinian*: the Roman Emperor of the East (483–565) who codified the Roman Law and left it as a valuable legacy for mediaeval Europe.

30. *Si una* &c.: 'if one and the same thing is left



as a legacy to two persons, the one [is to take] the article, and the other the value of the article.' But Justinian's *Instit.* II. xx. 8, says the thing must be divided. Faust is citing the law as given in the *Institutes* of Gaius (ii. 205), a jurist who died about A.D. 180.

33. *Exhaereditare filium* &c.: 'a father cannot disinherit his son unless', &c. Perhaps, as Dr. Ward suggests, taken from *Instit.* ii. 13. 1 'filium et . . . placuit non aliter recte exheredari, nisi nominatim exheredentur'—'to be valid, the disinheritance of a son and . . . must mention them by name'.

34. *the institute*: by Justinian's orders the great jurists of his reign drew up the four books of the *Institutes*—a general summary of Roman Law, based on the earlier *Institutes* of Gaius. These two works form the basis of the study of Roman Law to-day at the Universities and elsewhere.

PAGE 5. 1. *the law*: the two earliest quartos have 'the Church'.

2. *His study*: this, the reading of the first two quartos, is defended by Dr. Ward as standing for 'its'. Mr. Bullen adopts the 1616 reading, 'This'.

4. *Too servile*: this from the 1616 quarto; the two earlier ones have 'The devil', which is meaningless.

6. *Jerome's Bible*: the Latin translation of the Bible by St. Jerome at the close of the fourth century was made partly from the original, partly from earlier Latin versions. Generally known as the Vulgate, it is accepted, with some later revisions, as the Authorized Version of the Church of Rome.

7. *Stipendium peccati* &c.: 'the wages of sin is death', Romans vi. 23.

9. *Si peccasse* &c.: (Translated in the next line), 1 John i. 8.

10-12. These lines might be printed as verse, the breaks coming after 'say', 'ourselves', 'belike', and 'die'.

14. *Che sera, sera*: the old spelling for 'Che sarà sarà', 'What will be, will be,' an Italian proverb.

15. *will . . . shall . . .*: these two words had not yet acquired the special meanings which are now generally



given to them south of the Tweed. 'Shall' with the third person now expresses the speaker's determination, so that 'What will be, shall be' is equivalent to 'What Fate decrees, I decree', which was not at all what Faustus meant.

19. *scenes*: presumably, 'pictures'.

23. *artizan*: one who practises any art; the term was not restricted, as now, to the industrial arts.

24. *quiet*: unmoving.

31. *tire thy brains*: the 1604 quarto has 'trie', that of 1609 'try'. Probably the edition of 1616 is right in reading 'tire'.

34. *The German Valdes*: the adjective is curious, as Faustus was himself a German, as was Cornelius. Editors have therefore suggested 'Hermann', but quite possibly Marlowe was for the moment forgetting the scene of the play, and writing for his English audience. No successful attempt has been made to identify Valdes.

*Cornelius*: Cornelius Agrippa (1486-1535), a famous German philosopher, alchemist, and student of magic. He was the author of *De Incertitudine et Vanitate Scientiarum* (1530), and of *De Occulta Philosophia* (1531-3). See also note to p. 7, l. 16.

PAGE 6. 9. *treasure*: the 1604 quarto has 'treasury'.

10. *Jove*: for an Angel to acknowledge the supremacy of a Pagan deity sounds strange to-day, but the use of 'Jove' for 'God' was a common practice at the time. On p. 13, l. 12, below, Faustus is said to have sinned 'against Jove's deity', and, more remarkably still, in *2 Tamburlaine*, II. ii, Christ is called the 'son to everlasting Jove', the confusion, as Dr. Ward says, being made complete by the words being put into the mouth of a Mohammedan.

12. *glutted with conceit of this*: entirely filled with the idea of gaining this power.

14. *Resolve me of*: free me from.

17. *orient*, from meaning 'eastern', came to mean 'brilliant', from the superior lustre of eastern pearls.

18. *the new-found world*: in 1492, ninety-eight years



before the presumed date of the play, Columbus discovered the West Indies. The conquest of Mexico and Peru followed, 1519-35, from which time a constant stream of wealth poured from the New World into the Old; though the first English settlement, that of Raleigh in Virginia, was not made till 1585.

19. *delicates*: dainties, a meaning revived by Keats ('Eve of St. Agnes,' xxxi) and William Morris.

24. *the public schools*: not schools for children, but the lecture-rooms at the Universities.

*silk*: Dyce's conjecture for the 'skill' of all the quartos.

27. *the Prince of Parma*: Alessandro Farnese, Duke of Parma in north Italy, was a general in the Spanish service who was made governor of the Low Countries in 1578. In 1585 he took Antwerp after a fourteen months' siege, but was mortally wounded at Rouen in 1592. Though the Netherlands had achieved independence under William the Silent, they nominally remained part of the Empire ('our land') till the treaty of Westphalia in 1648.

30. *Antwerp's bridge*: there is an interesting description of the building of the bridge across the Scheldt by Parma in Motley's *United Netherlands*, ch. v. Amidst inconceivable difficulties the 800 yards from shore to shore was bridged in eight months. The Antwerpers dispatched against it a whole fleet of fire-ships, which proved ineffective, and two 'hell-burners' or floating volcanoes, ships laden with 7,000 lb. of gun-powder and every conceivable kind of missile. One of these did not explode, but the other blew away 200 feet of the bridge and a thousand Spaniards.

PAGE 7. 3. *no object*: i.e. no other object.

12. *Gravell'd*: perplexed; literally, run aground, as a ship. This use of the word, which is certainly slang to-day, was common and literary till the nineteenth century. It appears in *As You Like It*, iv. i. 74.

15. *Musaeus*: a semi-mythical Greek poet, said to have been the son of Orpheus; he is 'the mythical father of poets, as Orpheus of singers'. When Aeneas



went down to the underworld he found Musaeus the centre of a great throng, who stood round him, looking up at him as he towered head and shoulders above them. *Aeneid* vi. 666-8.

16. *Agrippa*: i. e. Cornelius Agrippa. It is strange that Faustus speaks of him in the past tense, when he was not merely living, but present. His work on *Occult Philosophy*, so far from earning him general honour, caused him to be persecuted by the Church and shunned by the laity; cf. above, p. 10, l. 8, 'they two are infamous through the world'; but later ages have respected as a serious student one whom the mass of his contemporaries regarded as a dangerous charlatan. His *shadows* are the shades of the dead, which he is reported to have been able to summon at will.

21. *Indian Moors*: the Moors are properly the inhabitants of Morocco or Algiers; they have nothing but the darkness of their skins in common with the Indians who were so cruelly ill-treated by the Spanish conquerors of Mexico and Peru.

25. *Almain rutters*: German horsemen; cf. the mod. Fr. *allemand*, and the Germ. *Reuter*, mod. *Reiter*.

26. *Lapland giants*: the folk-lore tales of Lapland, like those of most countries, deal with giants in plenty; but the Lapps themselves are a short race, the average height of adult males being only five feet.

28. *Shadowing*: often used at the time in the sense of 'drawing' or 'painting', which does not give a wholly satisfactory sense. Dr. Ward questions the reading, but interprets it, if kept, to mean 'imaging forth'.

29. *Than have the*: from the 1619 quarto. The earlier ones have, 'Then [= Than] in their', which is clearly corrupt. Possibly the right reading is 'Than in the white breasts', i. e. than there is in the white breasts; a phrase which, if slightly irregular, is characteristic of the period.

30. *from Venice*: for about 500 years, until her



power was crippled by the League of Cambrai (1508), Venice was the great emporium of Europe and the channel through which the wealth of India poured into the west.

32. *old Philip's treasury*: Philip II of Spain (1527–98), the husband of our Queen Mary, received enormous sums each year in treasure-ships from his American dominions; and though no small number of his ships fell a prey to Drake and other English freebooters, enough reached Spain to enable him to equip the great Armada (1588), two years before the date of this play. In the chorus which follows Sc. VII we are told that Faustus was entertained at the court of the Emperor Charles V, the father and predecessor on the Spanish throne of Philip II. Marlowe seems not to have made up his mind as to the time of his play.

35. *object it not*: do not thrust that condition forward, i. e. that I will prove resolute.

39. *well seen*: well versed, a phrase common in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries; cf. *Taming of the Shrew*, I. ii. 134, 'A schoolmaster Well seen in music'.

PAGE 8. 1. *renowm'd*: 'renowm' was a sixteenth-century form of 'renown', the 'm' being substituted for 'n' to assimilate the word to the Fr. *renom*.

3. *the Delphian oracle*: the most famous oracle of the ancient world was that of Apollo at Delphi, a little town at the foot of Mount Parnassus and six miles from the Gulf of Corinth.

12. *lusty*: pleasant. There is no need to adopt either of the readings of the later quartos, 'little', or 'bushy'.

15. *wise Bacon's and Albanus' works*: Roger Bacon (1214–94), a student and philosopher who was some three centuries ahead of his time, naturally fell under suspicion of dealing in magic; on this account and for his attacks on the vices and ignorance of the clergy he was imprisoned for fourteen years. He certainly believed in astrology and the transmutation of metals, but his discoveries in optics, chemistry, and astronomy



have earned him a place in the foremost rank of English men of science.

*Albanus*' is the reading of all the quartos, but such a name is unknown. The editors are divided between [Pietro d']Albano (? 1250-? 1316), an Italian physician and alchemist who narrowly escaped burning by the Inquisition, and Albertus [Magnus] (? 1193-1280), a German Dominican, whose great learning inevitably made him suspected of magic arts. Mr. Bullen reads 'Albertus'.

27. *canvass every quiddity*: discuss every subtle argument. To *canvass* according to *N. E. D.* is primarily to toss in a canvas sheet (or, as we should now say, in a blanket), and so to shake thoroughly; hence to pull to pieces or discuss. A *quiddity* is properly the real essence of a thing, that which makes a thing what it is—the reply to the question, 'quid est?'; as discussions on such a point were likely to prove lengthy and ingenious, the term came to be transferred from the subject to the argument itself. Cf. Fulke, *Heskins' Parl.* 475, 'Hee saith hee will not use the quiddities of the schooles, but plaine examples' (1579).

29. *therefore*: on that account.

## SCENE II

PAGE 9. 4. *sic probo*: 'thus I prove my point', a common phrase in mediaeval disputations.

12. *that follows not*: i.e. my saying that God knows should not have led you to conclude that I did not. He still harps on this in ll. 15-18, where 'necessary' must stand either for 'necessarily' or for 'as necessary'.

16. *licentiate* is here a participle or adjective (= licensed), so there is no need to read 'licentiates' with Mr. Havelock Ellis. A licentiate is one who has taken a degree at some University and so received a licence to practise his calling.

17. *upon't*: the reading in the text is from the 1604 quarto; but probably the 1616 quarto is correct in



reading 'upon'; the meaning is then, 'argument, which you, as licentiates, should observe'.

23. *Ask my fellow*: i.e. the evidence of one's friends as to one's honesty is hardly reliable.

27. *corpus naturale . . . mobile*: 'a natural body [and therefore] movable'. These were common terms of the scholastic philosophers.

30. *the place of execution*: a mildly humorous phrase for 'the dining-room'.

33. *precisian*: a Puritan; literally, one who is precise in his religious observances.

PAGE 10. 12. *the Rector*: the title given to the head of a German University; the term is used at Oxford for the heads of Exeter and Lincoln Colleges.

### SCENE III

20-3. *Now that the gloomy shadow &c.*: these four lines are repeated verbatim in an anonymous play, *The Taming of a Shrew* (1594), sc. i., on which Shakespeare based his own comedy. Marlowe has been claimed as the author of the earlier play, but Dyce pronounces against the attribution.

The passage in plain prose means, Now that darkness comes from the southern to the northern hemisphere.

21. *Orion's drizzling look*: the appearance of Orion in the beginning of November was supposed to be attended with storms and rain, hence Virgil's epithets *nimbosus*, *aquosus*, ('cloudy', 'watery').

28. *anagrammatiz'd*: with the letters transposed so as to form another word or other words. The word proved too hard for the printers of the 1604 quarto, which gives 'and Agramithist'.

30. *adjunct to the heavens*: i.e. the heavenly bodies, which were conceived of as being 'joined to' the solid firmament of the sky.

31. *characters*: the symbols by which the heavenly bodies and the signs of the Zodiac are indicated in astronomy.

*erring*: wandering. The word 'planet' = wanderer.



35. *Sint mihi* &c.: 'may the gods of Acheron be favourable to me! May the threefold might of Jehovah prevail! Hail, ye spirits of fire, air, and water! Belzebub, prince of the east, monarch of the burning world below, and Demogorgon, we pray your grace that Mephistophilis may appear and arise.—Why dost thou linger?—By Jehovah, Gehenna, the holy water which I now sprinkle, the sign of the cross which I now make, and by my prayers, let Mephistophilis himself arise to do me service.'

*Acheron* was a river of Hades in classical mythology; *triple* may be a simple superlative, or it may refer to Jehovah's dominion over heaven, earth, and hell; *Belzebub*, or more correctly Beelzebub, the Philistine god of flies, was promoted in Christian mythology to be one of the rulers of hell under Lucifer (see note to p. 20, l. 11); *Demogorgon* first appears as the name of a demon in a commentary on Statius, written about 450; he was adopted by Ariosto, Spenser, and Milton, and makes a regular appearance in incantations.

PAGE 11. 4. *quod tumeraris*: the second word is not Latin. Of the various substitutes which have been proposed, the 'quid tu moraris?' of various editors is closest to the original, and has been translated in the note above.

7. *dicatus*: literally, 'dedicated, devoted'. The two earliest quartos have *dicatis*, which is presumably to be taken with *nobis*, 'to me your devotee'; but as Mephistophilis was to be Faustus's vassal, not his lord, there can be little doubt that the *dicatus* of the 1616 quarto, which is adopted by all modern editors, is the right reading.

21. *Quin regis* &c.: 'indeed thou rulest in the likeness of the friar Mephistophilis'.

22. *like a Franciscan friar*: an addition made by Dyce.

28. *ocean*: a trisyllable.



PAGE 12. 1. *per accidens*: 'through an additional circumstance', i.e. his own willingness to come. The quartos have 'per accident'.

3. *rack*: torture, by using it for unholy ends.

16. *confounds hell in Elysium*: makes no distinction between the two.

PAGE 13. 10. *these*: so 1616; the earlier quartos have 'those'.

12. *Jove's*: see note to p. 6, l. 10.

14. *four and twenty*: so the second quarto (1609); the first has '24'.

16. *on me*: the change of pronoun from the third (ll. 13-15) to the first (ll. 16-20) is certainly awkward; it no doubt proceeds from mere carelessness, and not from a change in the writer's point of view.

23. *resolve me of*: inform me of; the meaning is a slight extension of that on p. 6, l. 14.

28. *thorough* is a later form of 'through'; its use as a preposition is now confined to poetry, and even there it savours of affectation. All the quartos till 1631 read 'through'.

31. *country*: the first two quartos have 'land', which does not fit the metre.

*continent to*: attached to, one with.

33. *The Emp'ror*: through the Middle Ages, and indeed up to 1806, the title Emperor was given specifically to the head of the Holy Roman Empire, who claimed to be the successor of Charlemagne, and, through him, of the Roman Emperors. The Empire had as little right to the term Roman as to that of Holy, for its territories were mainly German, and from the fifteenth century onwards were practically conterminous with modern Germany, excluding East Prussia. The imperial crown was assigned by the votes of (ultimately) nine princes termed Electors, but from 1440 onwards the votes were always, except on two occasions, given to a prince of the house of Hapsburg.

35. *desir'd*: so 1616; the earlier quartos have 'desire'.



## SCENE IV

PAGE 14. 5. *pickadevaunts*: a picke-devant, or pique devant, was a short beard trimmed to a point. Literally 'peak in front'.

7. *comings in*: income; his *goings-out* refers to his out-at-elbows and tattered appearance.

8. *else*: if it is not so.

19. *Qui mihi discipulus*: 'you who are my pupil'. These were the first words of W. Lily's 'Ad discipulos carmen de moribus', a book of moral precepts for the young, by the author of a *Latin Grammar* that was popular in England for three centuries.

21. *beaten silk*: properly, overlaid with some metal stamped or hammered into it, and so, embroidered.

*staves-acre*: the only meaning given for this word in the dictionaries is 'a species of larkspur', a plant standing a foot or two high with bluish or purple flowers. Its seeds contain the poison delphinine and are used in a powder or ointment against vermin in man or beast. Cf. Nash's *Lenten Stuff* (1599, Epist. Dedicat.), 'Look, how much tobacco we carry with us to expell cold, the like quantity of staves-aker we must provide to kill lice in that rugged country of rebels' (viz. Ireland). The word is a corruption of *ἀσταφίς ἄγρια* (wild raisin). Mr. O. W. Tancock says (*Notes and Queries*, 5th Ser. xi. 324) that there is no sense in Wagner's offering to make his attendant go in embroidered silk and vermin-powder, and accordingly he suggests that staves-acre is a corruption of 'stauracia' or 'stauracin', a silken stuff figured with small crosses (*σταυρός*, a cross), in frequent use at the Byzantine court. A man who could mishear (or pretend to mishear) 'guilders' as 'gridirons' (p. 15, l. 3) might certainly mishear 'stauracin' as 'stavesacre'; but so far from seeing no sense in the accepted reading, one may surely say that, considering the clown's condition (l. 34), the present of a silk doublet unaccompanied with vermin-powder would leave him little better off



than before. The use of the terms 'beaten' and 'staves' is an obvious quibble.

22. *knaves-acre*: this was no unusual name for a strip of ground; in Massinger's *A New Way to Pay Old Debts*, II. iii. 38, there is a desirable piece of glebe land so called, and it was the old name of Poultney Street in Soho.

31. *familiars*: attendant demons.

PAGE 15. 2. *guilders*: Dutch silver coins worth about 1s. 8d. English money, or two francs. The *French crown*, or 'écu', varied considerably in value, but its average seems to have been three francs; it would not, of course, pass as currency in Germany.

17. *Baliol and Belcher*: the former name is probably a corruption of 'Belial', the latter an appropriate term for a fire-vomiting demon.

22. *slop*: the word is used either for baggy breeches, or for a loose jacket or smock. Dr. Ward takes it to mean wide trunk-hose, but a man is more naturally described by the clothes on the upper part of his person.

PAGE 16. 12. *diametarily*: directly, in a straight line. The word is an erroneous form of 'diametrally', which is the reading of the 1616 quarto.

13. *quasi vestigias, &c.*: 'as though to tread upon my footsteps'. Grammatically it should be 'vestigiiis nostris'.

14. *fustian*: jargon; properly the name of a coarse material; for the extension of meaning cf. 'bombast', which originally meant cotton-wool.

## SCENE V

PAGE 17. 9. *That makes*: in Abbott's *Shakesperian Grammar* there are many instances of third persons plural of verbs ending in -s, e.g. *Tempest*, v. i. 16, 'His tears runs down.' The usage is probably a survival from the Northern Early English second and third persons plural in -s, in Anglo-Saxon -th.

15. *the signiory of Emden*: Emden is a town at the



mouth of the river Ems in East Friesland; it was a rich port in the sixteenth century, but there seems to be no other reason why Faust should have coveted its domain in particular.

18. *Cast no more doubts*: the forty-second meaning of *Cast* in *N. E. D.* is 'to revolve in one's mind . . . consider' (*Obs.*), this passage being quoted under the transitive uses.

23. *tell me*: 'me' is omitted in all the quartos till that of 1631.

25. *he lives*: so 1616; the two earlier quartos have 'I live'.

26. *So*: provided that.

PAGE 18. 2. *why* is omitted till the 1616 quarto.

4. *Solamen miseris, &c.*: 'it is a comfort to the wretched to have partakers of their grief'; a line of unknown origin quoted by various authors, including Dominicus de Gravina (c. 1350) and Thomas à Kempis.

PAGE 19. 1. *a chafer*: a portable grate. Cf. the modern chafing-dish, which is heated by a spirit-lamp.

2. *set it on*: Faust had caught his blood in a saucer, as we learn from the prose *History*, and he is now told to hold this saucer over the fire.

8. *Consummatum est*: 'it is finished'.

11. *Homo, fuge*: 'flee, man'.

28. There are only four feet in this line; and a word moreover is wanted with 'enough', such as 'exchange', or 'reward', or 'return'.

PAGE 20. 6. *he desires*: these words are not in any of the old quartos, and it is questionable whether they are needed. 'Whatsoever' is often used after 'anything' without a verb, e.g. 'He did not say anything whatsoever', and it is more probable that the phrase should have passed muster without 'anything', than that the two words, if they were needed, should have been omitted in one edition after another. Cf. also l. 16 below, 'into their habitation wheresoever', where the editors have not felt obliged to insert '[it be]'. Moreover, if the two words are to be inserted, the latter



should be 'desire', the subjunctive; cf. below, l. 9, 'he please.'

10. *by these presents*: a legal phrase, still in use, meaning 'by this present document'.

11. *Lucifer*: his name meaning 'light-bringer', he is rightly styled 'prince of the east'; a term which has no appropriateness when applied to Beelzebub, as Faust applies it, p. 11, l. 2. But it must be remembered that Faust was then a neophyte in magic and likely to confuse his terms.

12. *that, twenty-four years*: this punctuation makes 'that' a conjunction, which it cannot be as there is no following finite verb. The comma should be placed before 'that'; then the object of 'grant' is 'full power', &c., the two intervening clauses being absolute. Marlowe wrote 'that twenty-four years', instead of 'those', because he was thinking of the period of time as one continuous whole. Cf. 'this eight weeks' below, p. 40, l. 22.

22. *question with thee*: discuss with thee; cf. the subst. 'question', meaning subject of discussion.

26. *Within the bowels, &c.*: i.e. hell is not a place, but a state inherent in all parts of the universe where there is endless suffering. This is a notable conception of hell, all the more remarkable in view of the belief in hell as a place of material fire and physical torment, which was held almost universally in Marlowe's day and survived well on in the nineteenth century. It is hardly possible to avoid quoting Milton:

The mind is its own place, and in itself  
Can make a Heav'n of Hell, a Hell of Heav'n.  
*Par. Lost*, I. 254-5.

29. *one self place*: one and the same place. To the end of the sixteenth century *self* was commonly used for 'same'.

33. *are*: all the quartos till 1620 have 'is'.

PAGE 21. 3. *so fond to*: so foolish as to.

5. *old wives' tales*: the 'aniles fabellae' of Horace, *Sat.* ii. 6. 77. Cf. 1 Timothy iv. 7, 'old wives' fables'.



9, 10. These two unmetrical lines can be made to scan by the insertion of one word:

How! now in hell! Nay, [Mephistophilis],  
An this be hell, &c.

11. *What! walking, disputing, &c.*: for this quite remarkable line the 1616 quarto has 'What, sleeping, eating, walking, and disputing'. The '&c.' here may perhaps be explained as at p. 33, l. 32; see the note thereon; though an actor could hardly be expected to display the same volubility in impromptu blank verse as in prose.

16. Wagner proposes to render this line metrical by a simple transposition:

Nay, fetch me one, sweet Mephistophilis.

23, 24. This should be printed as one line of verse.

29. *She*, in strict grammar, should, of course, be 'Her'.

30. *Penelope*: the wife of Odysseus (Ulysses), who faithfully waited for her husband's return from the siege of Troy, though her hand was sought by a horde of suitors who daily wasted her substance. These were all slain by Odysseus on his return after an absence of twenty years.

31. *Saba*: a variant of Sheba, the name of a part of Arabia. The word is here used for the queen of that country who visited Solomon (1 Kings x. i). Holy writ reports nothing of her wisdom except that she proved the king 'with hard questions' and complimented him on his wisdom and prosperity. According to Arabian legend her name was Balkis, and she bore a son to Solomon from whom the Ethiopians are descended.

35. *iterating*: repeating.

37. Dr. Ward points out that, to scan this line, the last three words must be read as, 'thund'r, and light-en-ing'.

PAGE 22. 9. *characters*: see note to p. 10, l. 31. It is interesting to note that a knowledge of astronomy and natural history was not to be acquired without the assistance of Mephistophilis.



17. *thou art deceived*: Faust cannot believe that the book contains all that Mephistophilis asserts.

Lines 3 ('Thanks, Mephistophilis', &c.) to the end may, without any great straining of emphasis, be read as verse, the lines ending with 'would I', 'spells', 'raise up', 'book', 'see', 'heavens', 'dispositions', 'more', 'plants', 'earth', 'thee'. The roughest of the lines so made might be paralleled by others in the play which are printed as verse. Wagner would amend the lines as follows:

F. Thanks, Mephistophilis; yet fain would I  
[Possess] a book wherein I might behold  
All [magic] spells and incantations,  
That I might raise up spirits when I please.

M. Here they are in this book.

F. Now would I have  
A book where I might see all characters  
And planets of the heavens, that I might know  
Their motions and dispositions.

M. Here they are too.

F. Nay, let me have one book more,—  
And then I have done,—wherein I might see all  
plants,  
[All] herbs and trees that grow upon the earth.

M. [Well] here they be.

F. O, [there] thou art deceived.

M. Tut, [I am not deceived,] I warrant thee.

Wagner's particular emendations of the text may not commend themselves to the reader, but if we reflect that our earliest edition of the play is dated eleven years after Marlowe's death and that the play had been performed frequently in the interval, we shall see that corruptions must inevitably have found their way into the text. It is pretty safe to assume that no weak or halting rhythm flowed from the pen of one famous in his own day for his 'mighty line'.



## SCENE VI

PAGE 23. 13. *thunder*: Dyce's emendation of the 'thunders' of the quartos, but see note to p. 17, l. 9.

20. *Alexander's love and Oenone's death*: Alexander was a name of Paris, son of Priam, king of Troy. He received the name (= 'defender of men') from the bravery he showed in his early manhood. He married Oenone, daughter of the river-god Cebren, but on a visit to the court of Menelaus at Sparta, he fell in love with Helen, the wife of Menelaus, and carried her off to Troy, leaving Oenone desolate. At the capture of Troy Paris was wounded and returned to Oenone, to whom alone had been given power to heal his wound; but stung by his desertion and long neglect she refused, and Paris died. Oenone then, full of remorse, slew herself on her husband's funeral pyre. The fifth of Ovid's *Heroic Epistles* is from Oenone to Paris, and Tennyson has a beautiful poem on the subject.

21. *he, that built the walls of Thebes*: Amphion had received from Mercury a lute, on which he played so sweetly that the stones he had gathered to build a wall round Thebes moved of their own accord into their proper places. See Horace, *Od.* iii. 11. 1, 2.

27. *astrology*: the words 'astronomy' and 'astrology' have only been differentiated since the end of the seventeenth century.

28. *heavens above the moon*: according to the Ptolemaic system of astronomy the Earth was the centre of the universe and was surrounded by eight (or, according to later belief, ten) transparent spheres, which formed the paths of the Sun, the Moon, and the planets. All these spheres revolved on a common axis but with different angular velocities, which accounts for the rising and setting of the different heavenly bodies. The sphere nearest to the Earth was that of the Moon; then in order came Mercury, Venus, the Sun, Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, and the fixed stars. There is an admirable account of Ptolemaic



astronomy in Masson's Introduction to *Paradise Lost*.

29. *but one globe, &c.*: i.e. a globe formed of one substance, as our planet is. The answer given is that, as there are four elements, the celestial bodies are compounded of four substances.

30. *centric*: central; this is the first recorded use of the word, which reappears in *Paradise Lost* and has continued to modern times.

36. *terminine*: the word is only found in this passage; *N. E. D.* suggests that it is either an error for 'termining', or an extended form of the subst. 'termine' (= term), in its various senses. It is used here for 'extremity'.

37, 38. There appears to be no real antithesis here, 'their names are not feigned, but they are wandering stars.' Mephistophilis seems to mean that the names are not fancy names given at random, but are the actual names of the planets. The only other interpretation I can see is, that Saturn, Mars, &c., are not mere fictitious names, corresponding to nothing in reality, but are planets. But this is a statement which no one who had seen them would need.

PAGE 24. 2. *situ et tempore*: 'in position and time', i.e. in the direction of their movements and in the time they take to revolve round the earth.

4, 5. *the poles of the world* (i.e. of the Earth) and *the poles of the zodiac* are situated on the same common axis (see note to p. 23, l. 28) on which all the spheres revolve.

10. *the first*: i.e. the apparent motion caused by the Earth's revolution on her axis. The second motion is that of the seven planetary spheres, which moved at different rates. The times given are those of their apparent revolution round the earth, and it is interesting to compare the times of their actual revolution round the Sun: Saturn takes  $29\frac{1}{2}$  years, Jupiter  $11\frac{3}{4}$ , Mars  $1\frac{4}{5}$ ; Venus  $7\frac{1}{2}$  months, Mercury 3 months. Saturn was the remotest planet known at the time, Uranus not being discovered till 1781, and Neptune not till 1846.



14. *freshmen's suppositions*: theories current among first-year students at the Universities.

15. *a dominion or intelligentia*: 'the School Philosophers . . . teach, the Coelestial Orbs to be moved or guided by Intelligences, or Angels', Boyle, *Enq. Notion Nat.* 53 (1685).

18. *the firmament* was the eighth of the spheres mentioned in the note to p. 23, l. 28, the sphere of the fixed stars.

19. *the empyreal heaven*, generally termed the Crystalline Sphere, contained all the eight inner spheres, and was invented to explain the gradual change in the relative position of the heavenly bodies known as 'the precession of the equinoxes'. The 1604 quarto has 'imperial'.

20. *resolve me*: free me from doubt. Cf. p. 6, l. 14; and p. 13, l. 22.

21. *conjunctions, &c.*: a *conjunction* is the apparent proximity of two heavenly bodies; an *opposition* is their extreme divergence; any other relative position than these two is termed an *aspect*.

24. *Per inaequalem, &c.*: 'owing to their unequal motion with regard to the whole', i.e. the fact that the spheres had different angular velocities.

30. *Move me not*: urge me not; cf. the modern phrase 'to move that the House do now adjourn', and the subst. 'motion' in the sense of 'proposal'.

PAGE 25. 2. *think, Faustus, &c.*: in the quartos the two Angels enter after l. 7, and this line is assigned to Faustus. Prof. Wagner first made the change, which has been generally accepted.

12. *raze*: scratch, or graze.

14. *Aye*: this is probably a misprint; all the quartos and all modern editions, except those following Dr. Ward's text, have 'Ah'.

22. *away*: the 1616 quarto reduces the six-foot line by omitting this word; but see note to p. 49, l. 29.

27. *And of his dam too*: editors have supposed with reason that these words were not written by Marlowe,



but were merely actor's 'gag'. References to the devil's dam are found as early as *Piers Plowman* (1393); she is generally alluded to as being worse than her son (e.g. *Com. of Err.* iv. iii. 51), but I have not found any other details about her.

35. *the Seven Deadly Sins*: the seven sins enumerated below are entitled 'mortal', 'capital', or 'deadly' as entailing spiritual death; they are also the sins from which all others ('venial sins') are supposed to arise. They frequently appeared in the early Moralities and Miracle Plays.

PAGE 26. 12. *like Ovid's flea*: the *De Pulice* ('On a flea') is certainly not by Ovid; it was probably a production of the Middle Ages. I do not know why the text does not read, 'like to Ovid's flea', with all the early quartos.

16. *cloth of arras*: a rich tapestry fabric, called after Arras in Flanders; it was used to ornament the walls of great buildings, but it is to be noted that *Pride* demanded it as a carpet.

27. *case of rapiers*: 'a pair of rapiers worn in a single sheath, and used one in each hand' (Havelock Ellis). Cf. Webster, *The White Devil*, v. vi, after l. 21, 'Re-enter Flamineo with two case of pistols.'

29. *shall be my father*: 'shall' has no notion of futurity here, but is rather the equivalent of 'must', used to express a logical inference. We now use 'will' in the same way; e.g. 'That will be your house, I suppose.'

32. *born of a chimney-sweeper and an oyster-wife*: and therefore black and malodorous. It is not easy to see why the text has substituted 'born' for the 'begotten' of all other editions, ancient and modern. The same alteration is made in p. 27, l. 20, below.

PAGE 27. 6. *bevers*: the earliest meaning of *bever* is 'drink', but the word soon came to mean 'a small repast between meals', otherwise known as 'nuncheon' or 'elevenses'. Its ultimate derivation is Lat. *bibere*, to drink; cf. 'beverage'.

9. *Peter Pickleherring*: 'Pickelhäring' in German



means a Merry-andrew or buffoon. The word has here an obvious secondary reference to the fish.

10. *Martlemas-beef*: Martinmas, or the feast of St. Martin, is on November 11; cattle were generally slaughtered then to be salted for the winter.

13. *March-beer*: March and October are the two best months for brewing in England, as the fermentation is retarded if the weather is too cold, and unduly forced if it is too hot. Hence March beer and October beer were the strongest and most highly esteemed.

14. *progeny*: in the obsolete sense of lineage, parentage; cf. *1 Henry VI*, III. iii. 62, 'Doubting thy birth and lawful progeny.'

27. *The first letter, &c.*: that this was a venerable jest is shown in Dr. Ward's edition by a quotation from *Euphues* (1579), 'a gentlewoman . . . the first letter of whose name . . . is Camilla.'

39. *turn thyself*: Mr. Bullen suggests omitting 'thyself' to reduce the line to five feet.

PAGE 28. 1. *chary*: dear, precious. (*Obs.*)

6-16. In the two earliest quartos these lines are given to Wagner. The 1616 quarto and subsequent editors assign them to the Chorus. Dyce suggests that the error arose from the parts of Wagner and the Chorus being played by the same actor.

9. *Olympus' top*: Mount Olympus, on the borders of Thessaly and Macedonia, was the fabled home of the gods.

11. *yoky*: this word seems to be used for 'yoked' only in this passage. Chapman in his *Iliad* (xvii. 382) talks of the 'yoky sphere', meaning the round yoke.

12. *to prove cosmography*: to make trial, have experience, of the general plan of the universe.

15. *holy Peter's feast*: St. Peter's day is June 29.

16. *to this day*: on this day, or to-day.

## SCENE VII

20. *Trier*, or *Treves*, is a city on the Mosel in Prussia. It is noted for its Roman remains and the 'Holy



Coat', said to have been worn by Christ. It is 'pleasantly surrounded by low vine-clad hills' (*Enc. Brit.*), transformed by Marlowe into 'airy mountaintops'.

22. *deep-entrenchèd lakes*: i. e. the moat of the wall.

23. *Not to be won*: Treves was taken by the Huns under Attila, and thirteen hundred years later by Napoleon.

29. *straight forth*: straight forward, i. e. in straight lines; 'right forth' had the same meaning.

30. *Quarter*: the 1604 quarto has 'Quarters'; see note to p. 17, l. 9.

*equivalents*: portions of equal size; the earliest quarto has 'equivalence'.

31. *Maro's golden tomb*: Virgil, whose full name was Publius Vergilius Maro, and who was generally called by his cognomen or third name up to the nineteenth century, died in 19 B.C. and was buried at Naples between the first and second milestones on the road to Puteoli (Pozzuoli). Throughout the Middle Ages Virgil bore the reputation of being a great magician, though there is not a line of his writings or a fact of his life which supports the belief; but, as Long says, 'it is the fate of a great name to be embalmed in fable'.

32. *The way he cut, &c.*: the Bay of Naples is divided from the Bay of Baiae by the promontory of Posilipo, which projects due south. Through this promontory a tunnel has been cut 2,244 feet long, 21 feet wide, and in some places 70 feet high; it was possibly constructed by Marcus Agrippa in 29 B.C., but as Virgil's tomb stands at the Naples end of it, it is easy to see how the authorship of the tunnel would be assigned to him.

PAGE 29. 3. *one*: so 1616; the two earlier quartos have 'midst'.

*a sumptuous temple*: From the prose *History* (see Introduction, p. v) we gather that this is meant for St. Mark's at Venice, which is 'sumptuous' even if not remarkable for its height.

4. *her*: why feminine? Dr. Ward suggests that the



reason is that 'temple' stands for 'church', and that both *κυριακή* and *ecclesia* are feminine.

9-11. These lines may be read as verse, the breaks coming after 'not', 'up', and 'use'. They do not run well, but it is strange they, and ll. 13-14, should be the only prose lines in the first half of this scene. It may well be, as Mr. Bullen suggests, that they are a garbled version of what Marlowe wrote. Cf. note to p. 22, l. 17.

18. *underprop*: the 1604 quarto has 'underprops'; see note to p. 17, l. 9.

19, 20. These two lines are not found till the edition of 1616.

21. *four stately bridges*: a map of 1579 gives five bridges then crossing the Tiber: (1) Ponte S. Angelo—see l. 23 below; (2) Ponte Sisto, built 1473-5 on the site of one erected by Agrippa; (3) Ponte Quattro Capi, the old Pons Fabricius, built 62 B.C.; (4) Ponte S. Bartolommeo, the old Pons Cestius, built ?45 B.C.; (5) Ponte di S. Maria, on the site of Pons Aemilius or Senatorius, built 181-143 B.C. This bridge fell in 1598 and its ruins were long termed Ponte Rotto. It stood a few yards from the modern Ponte Palatino. Possibly the two island bridges (3) and (4) are here counted as one.

*lean*: Prof. Breymann very plausibly suggests 'lead'.

23. *Ponte Angelo*: formerly the Pons Aelius, built A.D. 135 by Hadrian to connect his mausoleum with the Campus Martius; the mausoleum is now the Castello di S. Angelo. It directly faces the bridge, but is not, and never was, built upon it; in the Middle Ages shops were built along the bridge, but they were pulled down in 1450.

26. *double cannons*: *N.E.D.* takes this to mean simply extra large cannons; but Dr. Ward points out that there are two cannon with triple bores now in Woolwich Museum, which were taken from the French at Malplaquet. This may therefore mean 'with double bore'.

28. *pyramides*: (four syll.). Marlowe did not of



course mean that Caesar had carried off the Egyptian pyramids. The word is used for a spire, e.g. the 1610 translation of Camden's *Britannia* speaks of the 'three pyramids or spires of stone' of Lichfield Cathedral. So here Marlowe no doubt means 'obelisks', such as were brought to Rome by the successors of the great Julius, if not by himself.

31. *Of Styx, &c.*: Styx, Acheron, and Phlegethon (or Pyriphlegethon) were all rivers of the underworld in Greek mythology. The 'of' before 'Acheron' is omitted in the two earliest quartos.

37. Prof. Breymann and Mr. Bullen propose to omit 'fain'.

PAGE 30. 4. Mr. Bullen proposes to piece out this defective line by inserting 'Mephistophilis' after 'me'.

10. *a Sonnet*: more commonly *sennet*, apparently a variant of 'signet', in the sense of signal; the second and third quartos print 'sinet'. It was a set of notes on the trumpet to mark the entry of some eminent personage on the stage.

32. *a dirge*: a funeral service, or service of repose for the dead. It is a contraction of *dirige*, the first word of Psalm v. 8, 'Dirige, Domine deus meus, in conspectu tuo viam meam', which was the Latin antiphon sung at that service.

38. *Aware*: Johnson interprets this as the adjective with 'Be' omitted; but he does not notice the subsequent omission of 'of', for which there seems to be no parallel.

PAGE 31. 6. *bell, book, and candle*: i. e. with all due forms of excommunication. That service ended with the words, 'Do to (= close) the book, quench the candle, ring the bell.' Of course excommunication would not be used against a ghost, but the same procedure might be used for exorcism.

21. *took Friar Sandelo a blow*: the word 'take' was often used for to 'strike', with or without the word 'blow' after it. Cf. *Taming of the Shrew*, III. ii. 165, 'This mad-brained bridegroom took him such a cuff.' Cf. the use of 'Catch'.



PAGE 32. 8. *As*: often used for 'that' after 'such' and 'so' in Elizabethan English. Cf. below, p. 36, l. 18.

11. *Carolus the Fifth*: Charles, king of Spain, was elected Emperor in 1519. After thirty-six years he abdicated from his Spanish dominions in favour of his son Philip II, and two years later he resigned the imperial throne to retire to a Spanish monastery. He died in 1558 after two years' retirement.

14. *see['t]*: this addition by Dyce seems needless; the preceding line may very well be the object of 'see', as well as of 'leave'.

### SCENE VIII

24. *a chafing*: to chafe is to make, or to get, warm, either in body or mind. Cf. 'chafer', p. 19, l. 1.

28. *roaring*: a slang term of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, which still survives in the phrase 'to drive a roaring trade'. It has about as little connexion with its literal meaning as the modern 'ripping'.

PAGE 33. 7. *ippocras*: hippocras was spiced wine; it took its name from the funnel-shaped bag through which it was strained; this was called a Hippocras bag, or Hippocrates' sleeve, after a famous Greek physician of the fifth century B.C.

13. *horse-bread*: bread made of beans, bran, &c., for the use of horses was formerly common in England and is still used in parts of Germany. The statute 32 Hen. VIII, cap. 41, forbade any innkeeper to make it.

### SCENE IX

21. *Ecce, signum!*: 'Here's proof!'

22. *a simple purchase*: a good bargain. 'Purchase' is still used in law for the acquisition of property in any way other than by inheritance.

32. *you are but a, &c.*: the '&c.' is intended to show that the actor may use whatever terms of abuse he likes. Mr. Bullen quotes a stage direction from *The*



*Tryall of Chevalry* (1635), 'Exit Clown, speaking anything.'

PAGE 34. 8. *a matter of truth*: a change affecting their honesty.

9. *tone*: the one, opposed to 'tother'. The word arose from a misdivision of 'thet (= that) one'. 'The tone' and 'the tother' were common in literature till about 1600, as 'the tane' and 'the tither' are still in Scotland.

13. *scour*: a colloquial term for 'thrash'. Cf. *Henry V*, II. i. 60, 'I will scour you with my rapier'; *for a goblet* does not seem to make much sense; 'for your goblet' would mean to pay you out for the charge of stealing your goblet; but after 'for a' we should expect some word like 'rogue'. Perhaps that is what Ralph means; in certain circles almost any word may be used as a term of abuse.

18. *Sanctobulorum*: it is perhaps needless to say that this incantation is mere gibberish, though it conjured up Mephistophilis.

32. In the two earliest quartos this speech of Mephistophilis begins, 'Vanish villains, th' one like an ape, another like a bear, the third an ass, for doing this enterprise.' Dyce was the first to omit the lines, as they are clearly another version of p. 35, ll. 6-8; they were possibly (Dr. Ward says obviously) intended as an alternative ending to the scene.

34. *awful*: in its literal sense, full of awe. Cf. Milton, 'Nativity Ode,' 59:

And kings sat still with awful eye,  
As if they surely knew their sovran Lord was by.

## SCENE X

PAGE 35. 15. *The Emperor's Court*: i. e. the court of Charles V; see p. 32, l. 11, and note. Innsbruck, on the Inn, the capital of Tyrol, Austria, was a favourite residence of the Emperors.

23. *what thou list*: the subjunctive here implies indefiniteness.



34. *answerable*: suitable.

35. *for that*: for this superfluous 'that' after a conjunction cf. 'if that', p. 43, l. 6, and note.

*love and duty binds*: possibly the verb is singular, the two subjects being taken as one, but more probably it is plural as at p. 17, l. 9.

PAGE 36. 8. *won*: Dyce suggests 'done'.

11. *Hereafter, &c.*: this line seems to have gone to pieces; it is impossible to scan it as it stands, and emendation, however easy, would be pure conjecture.

18. *As*: See note to p. 32, l. 8.

*motion*: Dr. Ward says this = 'mention', but neither he nor the dictionaries supply any parallel. The word is of course common in the sense of proposal; but unless it is a printer's error for 'mention'—as Wagner suggests—I can only interpret it as meaning, 'when I hear of any of his movements or activities.'

23. *his beauteous paramour*: this can hardly be the celebrated courtesan Thais who accompanied Alexander on his Persian campaign—see Dryden, 'Alexander's Feast',—for she and Alexander are called 'princes' below, l. 34, and p. 37, l. 25, to which title Thais had no right. 'Paramour' in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries contained no suggestion of unlawful love; it was indeed in the fifteenth century applied in religious works to the Virgin Mary or to Christ. Here, then, it probably refers to Roxana, a Bactrian princess whom Alexander married four years before his death. She was taken for the heroine of a play by Nat. Lee and of a novel by Defoe.

34. *those deceased princes*: a textual error for 'those two deceased princes'.

39. *lively*: in a lifelike manner.

PAGE 37. 5. *presently*: at once. Like other words with the same meaning, e.g. 'directly', 'immediately', this has come to mean 'in a little time from now', the experience of humanity having no doubt proved that when a man promised to do a thing 'presently' he usually did it after some interval.

9. *Diana*, being surprised while bathing by Actaeon,



turned him into a stag and set on her dogs to hunt him down.

16. *meet with*: get even with. Cf. the adj. *meet*, whose original etymological meaning is 'commensurate'.

34. *the concave*: the hollow.

PAGE 38. 1. *good*: good sir, or my good man, where the adj. has entirely lost its intrinsic meaning; indeed the latter phrase is commonly employed in hostile address. For the use of 'good' alone cf. *The Tempest*, i. i. 13, 'Nay, good, be patient.'

## SCENE XI

26. *Wittenberg*: see note to p. 3, l. 16.

27-30. These lines run naturally into two and a half lines of verse, the half being required to complete l. 26. The breaks come at 'go', 'past', and 'foot'.

31. *a Horse-courser*: a jobbing dealer in horses. To *horse*, or *course*, an obsolete word of unknown origin, means to exchange. It was used of prisoners, but later restricted to horses.

33. *Fustian*: a feeble jest for 'Faustus'.

PAGE 39. 8. *a great charge, neither wife nor child*: I can make nothing of this: it might mean 'he has heavy expenses, [though he has] neither wife nor child'; but it is not easy to see how the 'though' could be omitted. Again, *charge* was a current term for a 'thick adhesive plaster applied to the body of a horse', and Mephistophilis might intend a poor jest, 'he has a big charge, which is neither his wife nor his child.'

13. *at any hand*: on any account. 'At no hand' is found with the opposite meaning, but both phrases are now obsolete.

20. *for forty*: this is generally taken to mean for forty dollars; but, as Dyce says, for this meaning we should expect 'for twice forty'. Can the phrase not mean 'for forty other horses'?

*if he had but the quality of hey-ding-ding, &c.*: Dr. Furnivall sees in this an allusion to the refrain,



'hey ding a ding', in the song 'Old Simon the King', but he gives no explanation of the meaning. It can hardly be, as some editors suggest, 'if he were worth an old song'; for it is nonsense to say, 'I would not take forty dollars for him; his hind quarters are admirable; and if he were worth anything, I'd make a good living out of him.' Clearly the 'quality' is one the horse does not possess; it could hardly be singing, for that has never yet been reckoned among possible equine accomplishments; but quite conceivably it might be dancing, the 'hey-ding-ding', representing the one-two-three of a dance measure. 'Hey ding a ding ding' seems to have been used for any tune; see 'It was a lover and his lass', l. 5, in *As You Like It*, v. iii, where it is used of the song of birds.

22. *slick*: sleek.

31. *Confound these passions*: drive away your agitation.

33. *in conceit*: in your thoughts.

37. *Dr. Lopus*: Dr. Roderigo Lopez, a Spaniard, and private physician to Queen Elizabeth, was tried and hanged in February 1594 for taking a bribe to poison the queen. The editors suggest that, as Marlowe died in June 1593, this passage cannot have been written by him; but, as I read it, there is no allusion to Lopez as a potential poisoner, but merely as an effective physician, which he is warranted as being by his high office.

PAGE 40. 5. *known of*: acquainted with. Cf. Fuller, *Church Hist.* (1655), v. ii. § 42, 'whose Education made them more known in the laws of the land'.

8. *bottle*: bundle. The expression 'a bottle of hay' is as old as Chaucer, and is still used in the phrase 'a needle in a bottle of hay'. It is a different word from the one meaning a vessel.

11. *snipper-snapper*: a conceited young fellow. 'Whipper-snapper' is commoner to-day.

12. *heypass*: a juggler's exclamation, commanding an object to move; so used here as a name for the magician's assistant.



30. *No*: Prof. Wagner suggests 'Now'; but 'No?' makes perfectly good sense.

40. *ostry*: or *hostry*, an obsolete form of 'hostelry', an inn.

PAGE 41. 9. *Vanholt*: in the German *Faustbuch* (see Introduction, p. v) this is Anhalt; which appears as Anholt in the English prose version. The Duchy of Anhalt is a small territory in Prussia, south-west of Berlin.

## SCENE XII

PAGE 42. 5. *taste on them*: 'to taste on', though now only found in dialect, was formerly used in literature for 'to taste of'. Cf. Cheke's version (1550) of Matt. xxvii. 34, 'When he had taasted on it, he wold not drink.'

8. *that being . . . how*: an anacoluthon, or change of construction.

*being, &c.*, is an absolute clause, with the subject 'it' omitted; this seems better than to take it as agreeing with 'you'.

14. *Saba*: see note to p. 21, l. 31.

26. *beholding*: an erroneous form of 'beholden' (= obliged), originating probably from the shortening of that word into 'beholde', which obscured its adjectival character.

## SCENE XIII

PAGE 43. 4. *means to die shortly*: this unmetrical order is changed by Prof. Wagner and Mr. Bullen to 'shortly means to die'.

6. *methinketh*: Prof. Wagner's correction for 'methinks' of the quartos, with which the line is a syllable short. Mr. Bullen suggests 'were so near'; other editors 'his death', &c.

*if that*: this superfluous use of 'that' after 'if' may be paralleled by 'because that', 'while that', 'when that', &c. They are all now archaic.

12. The quartos give no entrance for Mephistophilis, though they mention him in the stage direction on p. 44, l. 29. Dyce first made the correction.

15. *beautiful'st*: there is a growing tendency, which



one cannot but regret, to oust the *-er* and *-est* of the comparative and superlative in favour of 'more' and 'most'. The gain in euphony, which is at least disputable, is more than outweighed by the loss of dignity involved in the change. So long, however, as people find it harder to say 'beautifulest, admirablest' (l. 17) than their modern equivalents, it is useless to protest against their disuse, in an age chiefly characterized by slipshod pronunciation.

23. *For that*: see note to l. 6, above.

29. *the spoils*: more probably the wealth he carried off with Helen than the lady herself.

PAGE 44. 9. The quartos have simply 'Exeunt Scholars' and give no exit to Wagner. Dyce dismissed him after p. 43, l. 11; Dr. Ward retained him till the exit of the scholars, seeing no reason 'why he should be sent off the scene before persons inferior to himself in university standing'.

13. *the goal That shall conduct thee*: i. e. a happy death.

16. *repentant heaviness*: put by a figure of speech called hypallage for 'heavy repentance'.

27-8. *almost . . . now*: these two words are not in the two earliest quartos.

28. *to do thee right*: to pay thee what he owes.

32. *an angel hovers*: i. e. who hovers.

PAGE 45. 1. *with heavy cheer*: 'cheer' means primarily 'expression of face', and so 'mood, frame of mind', a meaning retained in the phrase, 'What cheer?'

18. *drift*: this might be (1) deviation from your course, or (2) your purpose. The latter is now an obsolete sense, but a phrase in *Tamburlaine*, Pt. II, v. ii. 45, 'to discourage all our drifts,' makes it the more probable. The stage direction following this line was inserted by Dyce.

22. *age*: old man.

37. *Faustus, this*: Dyce would transpose these words.

PAGE 46. 4. *topless*: is not this rather by hyperbole for 'immeasurably tall' than, as Dr. Ward says, 'which are not (over)topped by any others'? The



former sense suits all the passages he quotes at least as well as the latter, and is infinitely more poetical.

7. *suck*: the 1604 quarto has 'sucks', a reading which Dr. Ward says he 'dare not retain', despite the fact that the construction is found several times in the play. He also changes the 1604 reading of ll. 32, 33, 'smiles . . . laughs' into 'smile' and 'laugh'. All three changes were made in the 1616 quarto. For other instances of the final 's' see the note to p. 17, l. 9.

*flees*: presumably a printer's error for 'flies' given in all the earlier editions and by all other modern editors.

9. *is*: the 1604 quarto has 'be', which does not appear to have ever been used in literature for 'is'.

15. *Yes*: all the early editions and all other modern editors have 'Yea'.

*wound Achilles*: as Paris did, his arrow being guided by Apollo (Ovid, *Met.* xii. 596-606).

20. *hapless Semele*: she was the daughter of Cadmus, and one of the many damsels who received the attentions of Zeus, by whom she became the mother of Dionysus (Bacchus). Led by a fatal curiosity she asked her divine lover to appear before her in all his splendour, as he appeared to the Queen of Heaven, and when Zeus reluctantly consented and came as she had asked, she was consumed by his lightning.

21. *the monarch of the sky*: if this means Apollo, the Sun-god, there is no record of his having had any connexion with Arethusa. She was a nymph who, according to the commonest legend, was pursued by the river-god Alpheus, and was changed into a fountain by Artemis, protectress of virgins, to avoid his pursuit. But the epithet 'azur'd' suggests that Marlowe meant the fountain, not the nymph, the lines being merely a beautiful way of saying, 'lovelier than sunshine on clear water'.

22. *wanton*: playful, with no bad significance; cf. 'the wanton air', &c.

23. *shalt*: grammatically, of course, this should be 'shall'.



24-36. Dyce, followed by Mr. Bullen, suggests that these lines form a different scene, the locality being a room in the old man's house.

29. *to sift me*: cf. Luke xxii. 31, 'And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat.'

*pride*: powerful array.

32-3. *smile . . . laugh*: see note to l. 7 above.

## SCENE XIV

PAGE 48. 5. *cunning*: knowledge. Cf. p. 3, l. 23.

19. *save*: this word is not found in the two earliest quartos.

PAGE 49. 5. *O lente, &c.*: 'run slowly, slowly, ye steeds of night.' Cf. Ovid, *Amores*, i. 13. 39, 40:

At si, quem malis, Cephalum complexa teneres,  
Clamares, 'lente currite noctis equi.'

('But were you holding Cephalus, the lover of your choice, in your embrace, you would be crying out, "Run slowly, ye steeds of night".')

9. *See, see*: Wagner would omit the second word, but the repetition is very dramatic.

14. *it*: sc. the vision of Lucifer.

16. *mountains, &c.*: cf. Hosea x. 8, 'they shall say to the mountains, Cover us; and to the hills, Fall on us', a passage quoted in Luke xxiii. 30.

24. *clouds*: Dyce's correction for the 'cloud' of the quartos.

25-6. *you . . . your*: these words, of course, refer to the clouds; a more careful writer than Marlowe would certainly have written 'they' and 'their', which Dyce proposes to read, but with hesitation, thinking no doubt of such a passage as p. 13, ll. 13-20.

29. As printed the line contains six feet; if the 'Ah' is given a line to itself, 'Half th' hour' may stand as the first foot of five. But six-foot lines (Alexandrines) are occasionally met with in Elizabethan blank verse, e. g. above, p. 25, l. 22.



39. *Pythagoras' metempsychosis*: Pythagoras, one of the greatest of the early Greek philosophers, was probably born about 570 B. c. He taught the doctrine of metempsychosis or transmigration of souls, and professed to recognize in the cries of a dog that was being beaten the voice of a departed friend. He asserted, moreover, that he had himself fought as Euphorbus in the Trojan war, and that he had inhabited many different bodies in the past. Modern science pays him greater reverence for his discovery of the theorem in geometry which bears his name, that in a right-angled triangle the square on the hypotenuse is equal in area to the sum of the squares on the other two sides.

PAGE 50. 10. *quick*: alive.

### Chorus

23. *Apollo's laurel-bough*: Apollo had many aspects besides that of the sun-god. He was the god of song and music, the god of prophecy, the averter of destruction, and also the destroyer. He is here apparently regarded as the patron of learning, an office more commonly assigned to Minerva.

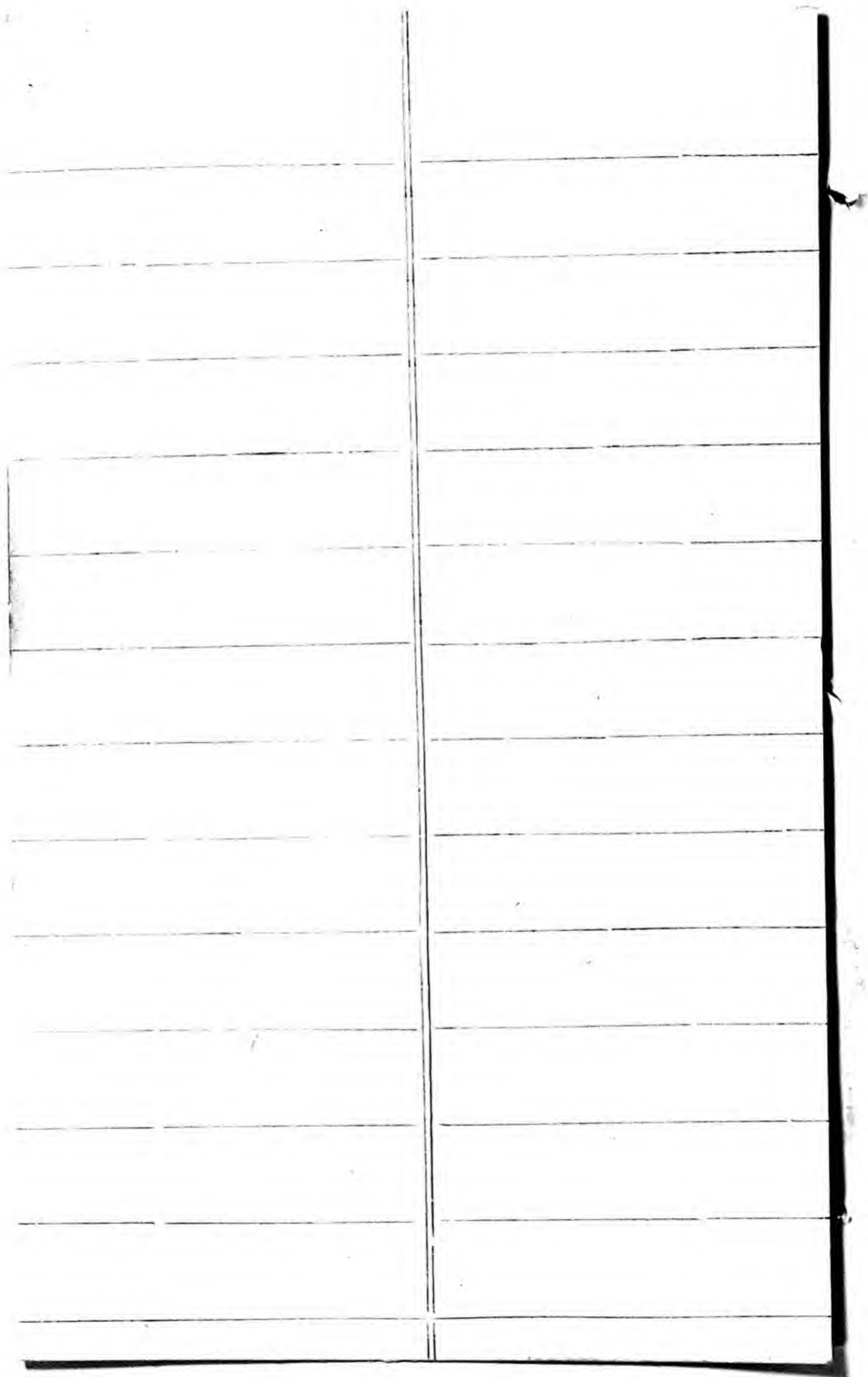
26. *fiendful*: the word is found only in this passage.

27. *Only to wonder at*: i. e. and not to imitate.

28, 29. It may be noted that riming lines are very rare in the play; they come here, by a convention of the time, to mark the end of the scene, a device which appears again and again in Shakespeare.

31. *Terminat hora, &c.*: 'the hour ends the day; the author ends his work', a line which no editor has succeeded in tracing to its source. It occurs as the motto at the end of *The Distracted Emperor*, printed by Mr. Bullen in his *Old Plays*. For 'auctor' the two earliest quartos have 'author'.







## FAUST

GOETHE says that *Faust* was written between 1769 and 1775. It was first published in 1790, and then has no Dedication, Prelude, or Prologue, but begins with the scene in Faust's study (p. 68). Much else is wanting which appeared in the later edition of 1807, the one from which Anster made his translation. The Dedication can only be understood by remembering that it was written twenty or thirty years after the play. Anster's translation, which appeared originally in 1835, was thoroughly revised for the Tauchnitz edition of 1867. It is from the later edition that the text given here has been taken.

### DEDICATION

PAGE 54. 4. *Aeol's harp*: presumably meant for the Aeolian harp, a stringed instrument so contrived as to be played on by the wind; called after Aeolus, god of the winds in classical mythology.

### PRELUDE

PAGE 55. 2. The theatre is the tent or booth of a travelling company, and the three characters are all strollers. The Mr. Merryman ('Lustige Person') is the Clown or Jester of the company. The points of view of the three characters are well contrasted: the Manager is thinking of his receipts, the Poet of fame, while the Merry-andrew points out that the object of a theatre is neither to make the Manager rich nor the Author famous, but to amuse the public.

PAGE 58. 19. *Receipts*: 'recipes', 'prescriptions'.

PAGE 63. 16. *levin*: lightning.

### PROLOGUE

PAGE 64. 1. It is perhaps needless to say that the idea of this prologue was taken from the first two



chapters of Job. G. H. Lewes in his *Life of Goethe* points out the resemblance between the Prelude and the Prologue: as in the former the Manager and the Poet argue about the puppets of the play which is to follow, so in Heaven the Lord and Mephistopheles determine how their puppets shall be made to act on earth.

5. *Raphael* first appears in the Book of Tobit (xii. 15) as 'one of the seven holy angels which present the prayers of the saints, and which go in and out before the glory of the Holy One'.

13. *Gabriel* was the angel who appeared to Daniel (viii. 16, ix. 21) to explain his visions. He also announced the births of the Baptist and of Jesus.

21. *Michael* is described in Daniel x. 13 as 'one of the chief princes' who fought for Israel. In Revelation xii. 7 he is spoken of as fighting against the dragon.

According to the Book of Enoch these three and Uriel were 'the four great archangels'.

PAGE 65. 1. *Mephistopheles*: on the original spelling of this demon's name, and its etymology, there have been numerous conjectures. He seems to have made his first appearance in the Faust legend; and in the Witch's kitchen scene (p. 149, l. 1, below) he is addressed as Satan. In *Doctor Faustus*, p. 11, l. 29, he terms himself 'servant to great Lucifer'.

PAGE 67. 9. *Dust he shall eat*: cf. Genesis iii. 14.

10. *heraldry*: pedigree.

29. *The Life, &c.*: the whole of this line is meant for the translation of *Das Werdende*, 'the Becoming', a reference to the *πάντα ῥεῖ*, 'everything is in a state of flux', of Heracleitus; which has been later paraphrased into 'there is no Being, but only Becoming'. Carlyle is quoted by Hayward (though I have not been able to find the passage, the reference there given being wrong) as saying that *Das Werdende* means the visible universe. Mr. Herand, who is cited in the same note, rather curiously says it undoubtedly means the third person of the Trinity.

38. *him*: the German is *den Alten*, 'the Old One'.



## TIME, NIGHT

PAGE 68. 1. Were the play divided into acts and scenes, this would be, as Prof. Blackie gives it, Act I, Sc. i.

PAGE 70. 17. *Nostradam's own hand*: Michel de Notredame, born in 1503, was a French astrologer and physician who brought out, under the title *Centuries*, two books of predictions in rime (1555-8), which had a considerable vogue and secured for their author the appointment of physician-in-ordinary to Charles IX. He was also the author of several other works, though the *Centuries* is the only one which has secured the distinction of numerous reprints and commentaries. It was condemned by the Church of Rome in 1781 for having foretold the downfall of the Papacy.

34. *Macrocosmus*: the great world, or universe, in contradistinction to the 'little world' or microcosm, i.e. man. The word is some centuries later than microcosm, by analogy to which it was originally formed. The *sign* of it was the symbol used to represent it in books of magic.

PAGE 71. 14-19. These lines have not been found in Nostradamus.

PAGE 74. 1. *to mete*: to measure, in the sense of matching oneself against another.

PAGE 75. 1. Prof. Blackie begins Scene ii here, and ends it with Wagner's exit, p. 77, l. 30.

PAGE 76. 14. *Ars longa, Vita brevis*: the translation of  $\delta \beta \acute{\iota} \omicron \varsigma \beta \rho \alpha \chi \acute{\upsilon} \varsigma$ ,  $\eta \delta \epsilon \tau \acute{\epsilon} \chi \nu \eta \mu \alpha \kappa \rho \acute{\eta}$ , a sentence of Hippocrates, the famous physician (d. 361 B. C.).

33. *sealed with seven seals*: cf. Revelation v. 1, 'a book . . . sealed with seven seals.'

PAGE 80. 28. *ward*: i.e. the ward of the key; the German is 'Bart' = key-bit.

PAGE 86. 29. *In your lives, &c.*: these lines in the original are a continuation of the Chorus of Angels and in the same metre.



## BEFORE THE GATE

PAGE 87. 1. Prof. Blackie begins Act II, Scene i, at this point.

5. *the Jägerhaus*: the ranger's or huntsman's house.

9. *the Wasserhof*: literally 'Water-court'.

PAGE 94. 23-4. *a Lion Red . . . the Lily*: Hayward explains that the Red Lion was the alchemical name for red mercury or cinnabar, the Lily was a preparation of antimony known as *lilium Paracelsi*; these were first united in a vessel of heated water and then exposed to open flame till their fumes were driven from the alembic into the retort. These fumes, the product of the two minerals, are termed the 'Young Queen'.

PAGE 95. 27. *rears*: i. e. 'would rear', if I could follow the sun.

PAGE 96. 33. '*incense-breathing*': the original has 'golden vapour'; Anster took his epithet from Gray's 'Elegy', 'The breezy call of incense-breathing morn.'

35. *a magic cloak*: in Dekker's *Old Fortunatus* there is a hat which possesses this property, and in the *Arabian Nights* there is a magic carpet, but I have not found elsewhere a carrying cloak.

PAGE 97. 9. *The midday*: 'mittag' in German is both 'midday' and (as here) 'south'.

## FAUST'S STUDY (1)

PAGE 99. 1. Here Prof. Blackie begins Scene iv of the second Act.

18. *Take thy ease, in thine inn*: Anster has taken this from *1 Henry IV*, III. iii.

PAGE 100. 19. *the Word*: *ὁ λόγος*. Faust tries different translations of the first sentence of the Fourth Gospel.

PAGE 101. 12. *the key of Solomon*: Sabatier says this refers to a book of magical formulas called *Clavicula Salomonis*; it was originally written in Hebrew, and was translated into German in 1686.

PAGE 102. 6-9. These are the four elemental spirits



of Fire, Water, Air, and Earth respectively; the second and fourth are 'Undine' and 'Kobold' in German.

25. *Incubus*: this is generally used of a demon who oppresses people, especially women, in their sleep; he was deemed to be the favoured lover of witches in the Middle Ages. Nowhere else does he seem to be identified with the Gnome; it is even suggested that Goethe changed the term to suit his rime.

PAGE 103. 5. *By the sign*: Faust makes here the sign of the cross.

21. *As he rouses*: to rouse was formerly used intransitively in the sense to rise from cover, to waken, to bestir oneself; but it seems to have been disused for nearly a century except by journalists.

PAGE 104. 25. *the god of flies*: Beelzebub; see *Doctor Faustus*, note to p. 10, l. 35.

26. *the Seducer*: Anster's rendering of Verderber—'Spoiler', or 'Destroyer' a translation of Apollyon (*ἀπολλύων* = destroying), the angel of the bottomless pit mentioned in Revelation ix. 11.

*the Liar*: the word 'devil', or 'diabolus', means 'slanderer', but there does not seem to be any one devil with that special title. Satan means 'adversary'.

PAGE 105. 7. *Poor fool-world Man*: die kleine Narrenwelt, 'the little fool-world', i. e. comprising a foolish world in his own little person, a microcosm of folly.

8. *I am not*: i. e. I am not a whole.

PAGE 106. 19. *the druid foot*: Drudenfuss ('wizard's foot') was the name for the pentagram ☆, a figure of great potency in magic.

### FAUST'S STUDY (2)

PAGE 111. 1. Prof. Blackie gives this as Scene vi of Act II.

PAGE 116. 2. *delicates*: see note to *Doctor Faustus*, p. 6, l. 19.

PAGE 117. 18. *the Doctors' Feast*: an inauguration feast given on taking a degree.



PAGE 120. 14. *Ars longa, vita brevis*: see note to p. 76, l. 14.

28. *Microcosmos*: see note to *Macrocosmus*, p. 70, l. 34.

PAGE 122. 15-23. *Aye, thus continue, &c.*: this is a conditional sentence, 'only continue to despise reason and knowledge, and I shall get you.'

24. *His*: i. e. Faust's.

PAGE 124. 36. *Spanish boots*: an instrument of torture similar to the boot described in Scott's *Old Mortality*, ch. xxxvi.

PAGE 125. 4. *One, Two, and Three*: i. e. all the workings of your mind must be in orderly and logical sequence.

PAGE 126. 2-3. '*Encheiresis Naturae*': 'the taking in hand, or manipulation, of Nature'.

PAGE 130. 7. *Eritis sicut Deus, &c.*: 'ye shall be as God, knowing good and evil' (Genesis iii. 5). This is the translation of the Revised Version; the Authorized Version has 'as gods'.

9. *the wily proverb*: possibly *Kunst macht Gunst*, 'knowledge brings favour'.

31. *this mantle*: see note to 'magic cloak' on p. 96, l. 35.

#### AUERBACH'S CELLAR IN LEIPZIG

PAGE 131. 1. This scene is laid in a place of public entertainment in Leipzig, which Hayward, who published his prose translation of *Faust* in 1833, visited and found to be 'of the same class and character as the Cider Cellar in Maiden Lane, Covent Garden'. There is an inscription in the cellar and a picture relating to Faust dated 1525. Prof. Blackie begins Act III here.

10. *beastliness*: i. e. unclean talk (*Sauerei*).

35. *the holy Romish empire*: see note to *Doctor Faustus*, p. 13, l. 33.

PAGE 132. 31. *Blocksberg*: another name for the Brocken, the summit of the long range of the Hartz Mountains, 55 miles south-east of Hanover.

PAGE 135. 32. *lately come from Rippach*: Rippach is



a village near Leipzig, and Hans von Rippach was the students' nickname for a country bumpkin.

PAGE 138. 39. *Tokay*: a rich, sweet wine, called after a town in Hungary.

PAGE 139. 14. *Wine is sap, &c.*: literally, 'Wine is juicy, vines are wood.'

PAGE 140. 22. *He might rest satisfied, &c.*: this remark is made to Mephistopheles, so the 'He' and 'his' should be 'You' and 'your'. *Broomstick*, which hardly reads like an English term of abuse, is literal for *Besenstiel*; presumably it refers to Mephistopheles' slim figure and long legs.

### WITCH'S KITCHEN

PAGE 143. 16. *A thousand bridges*: to build bridges over chasms and make roads through mountains were considered fitting tasks for magicians and demons. Cf. *Doctor Faustus*, p. 28, l. 32, and the legend of the Devil's Bridge in Central Wales.

40. Mephistopheles answers, 'A conversation like this is precisely the one I carry on with the greatest pleasure.'

PAGE 145. 22. *the whisk*: 'wedel' = tail, fan, or brush.

PAGE 150. 33. for *She* read *He* (Er).

PAGE 151. 13. *One-times-one*: the German name for the Multiplication table (*Einmaleins*).

PAGE 152. 20. *Walpurgis night*: Saint Walpurga, or Walpurgis, was born in Sussex about the beginning of the eighth century, and became an abbess in Bavaria, where she died. In herself she had no especial connexion with witches, but her festival being fixed for May 1, a date associated from very early times with magic rites, the eve of that day, which is rather erroneously called 'May-day night', was the witches' high festival, when they flew from all parts to meet their master the devil on the Brocken.

PAGE 153. 6. *A Helena*: for Faust's actual encounters with Helen of Troy see *Doctor Faustus*, Sc. xiii, p. 43, l. 31, p. 46, l. 1.



## THE STREET (1)

7. Act III, Sc. iv, in Prof. Blackie.

PAGE 154. 7. *Liederlich*: Hans Liederlich (Jack the Dissolute) is the German name for a profligate.

## EVENING—A NEAT LITTLE ROOM

PAGE 156. Sc. v in Blackie.

## PROMENADE

PAGE 161. 18. *Margaret*: in the original 'Gretchen', a diminutive of Grete, a shortened form of Margarete.

PAGE 162. 6. *Madge*: in the original 'Margretlein', a diminutive.

PAGE 163. 14. *the widow*: i.e. Martha, who appears in the next scene.

## THE NEIGHBOUR'S HOUSE

29. *my lonely straw*: to lie in the straw, besides its ordinary English meaning, means in German to be in reduced circumstances.

PAGE 164. 31. *There's something in it more than ought*: this line is hardly English; the German means 'There's something not right about it.'

PAGE 166. 14. *parts it not*: here, and below on p. 179, l. 32, Anster uses 'part' in the sense of 'part with' or 'part from', for which I can find no authority.

PAGE 168. 5. *Neapolitans*: Naples was famed throughout Italy for its debauchery.

16. *have checked*: to have checked.

PAGE 169. 20. *At the mouth of two witnesses*: Hayward refers to the Civil Law maxim (*Cod. IV. xx. 9*), 'Unius responsio testis omnino non audiatur.' Had he known Holy Writ as well as the Civil Law, he would rather have cited Deuteronomy xix. 15, 'at the mouth of two witnesses . . . shall the matter be established.'

## THE STREET (2)

PAGE 170. 24. *Sancta simplicitas!*: 'What holy simplicity!' John Huss's exclamation when he saw an old woman bringing her faggot to put on the pile at which he was to be burnt (1415).



## THE GARDEN

PAGE 175. 31. *in Proverbs*: King Lemuel, instructed by his mother, pronounced that the price of a virtuous woman was 'far above rubies', Proverbs xxxi. 10.

PAGE 176. 29. *a star-flower*: an aster (Sternblume).

## FOREST AND CAVERN

PAGE 178. 30. *lofty Spirit*: the critics are puzzled to know whom Faust is here addressing; there are considerable difficulties in making it either the Earth Spirit of pp. 72, 73, or the Lord of the Prologue in Heaven.

PAGE 179. 32. *cannot part*: see note to p. 166, l. 14.

PAGE 180. 35. *your old trade*: i.e. that of the doctor.

PAGE 183. 20. *her ruin*: the reader, no doubt, has asked himself why Faust did not marry Margaret; this entirely reasonable question is answered by Pradez, who says that one of the clauses of Faust's agreement with Mephistopheles bound him never to marry.

## AT THE WELL

PAGE 191. 14. *spreading Chopped straw*: the commentators say that this was a German custom where a bride was suspected of having been unchaste before marriage.

## ZWINGER.—A LITTLE SHRINE

PAGE 192. 1. The word 'Zwinger' is used for the space between the town-wall and the town-buildings. Prof. Blackie translates it 'an enclosed area', and Hayward suggests with some hesitation that it means 'a castle'. According to the dictionary the word, when applied to a place, may have the meaning first given, or may mean a prison, a house, or a beast-garden.

2. *Mater Dolorosa*: 'the Mother of Sorrows'.



## NIGHT

PAGE 194. 30. *Walpurgis night*: see note to p. 152, l. 20.

34. *the Brocken*: see the note on Blocksberg, p. 132, l. 31.

36. *yon blue light*: the presence of buried treasure was believed to be indicated, to those who had eyes to see, by a blue flame rising above the spot. It was also supposed that the treasure gradually forced its way to the surface.

PAGE 195. 6. *lion-dollars*: this coin was so called, says Bayard Taylor, from the city of Louvain (Germ. Löwen, lion), where it was first struck, with the figure of a lion on the obverse.

26. *Why, Catherine, stay*: obviously imitated, says Hayward, from Ophelia's song in *Hamlet*, IV. v. Anster has made the resemblance more obvious by quoting the exact words, ll. 31-3.

PAGE 196. 6. *rat-catchers*: an allusion to the Piper of Hamelin, who could lure children from their mothers, as well as rats from their holes.

14. *your duster*: Flederwisch is a goose-wing used for dusting, a feather broom; here, of course, it is a slang term for a sword.

24. *Oh, torture*: Anster has omitted the stage direction, 'falls'. Neither author nor translator marks the exit of Faust and Mephistopheles, which takes place just after the latter ends his speech.

## CATHEDRAL

PAGE 199. 23. *Dies Irae, &c.*: this ancient Latin hymn was probably written by Thomas of Celano, a Franciscan friar of the thirteenth century; it was early adopted into the Mass for the Dead of the Roman Catholic Church. No fewer than nineteen translations into English are given by Julian in his *Dictionary of Hymnology* as being in common use, the best known, perhaps, being that of W. J. Irons, which begins 'Day of Wrath! O day of mourning';



this is given in *Hymns Ancient and Modern*. The stanzas given in *Faust* are the first, sixth, and seventh of the original, the omitted third line of the first stanza being 'Teste David cum Sibylla'. Scott introduces and translates part of the hymn in *The Lay of the Last Minstrel*, VI. xxx, xxxi.

PAGE 200. 25. *flasket*: 'Fläschchen' means 'smelling bottle'. Carlyle in his 'Historic Survey of German Poetry' (*Edinburgh Review*, 1831) tells us that Mr. W. Taylor, of Norwich, translates the word 'Dram-bottle'! The word 'flasket' more commonly means a shallow basket, made of wicker or light metal.

### WALPURGIS NIGHT

For the title see note to p. 152, l. 20; and for the *Hartz Mountains*, note to p. 132, l. 31. *Shirke*, or rather Schierke, and *Elend* are two villages, five or six miles to the south-east of the Brocken.

PAGE 204. 10. *Mammon*: the Aramaic word for 'riches', which, being retained in the translation of Matthew vi. 24, became personified by mediaeval writers as the Devil of Covetousness. In this sense it was used by Milton in *Paradise Lost*, I, 678, and elsewhere.

PAGE 206. 14. *Sir Urian*: Herr Urian is the German equivalent of 'Mr. What-d'ye-call-him'; here of course it stands for the devil.

23. *Baubo*: used here as the name of a witch. According to Clement of Alexandria, Baubo was a woman who by her indecent pranks amused Demeter when she was seeking for Persephone.

32. *Ilsestein*: 'a high granite rock on the Brocken' (Hayward).

PAGE 207. 8. *Wizards and Warlocks*: the two words have the same meaning.

23. *Felsen-see*: lit. 'rock-lake', on the Brocken.

31-2. *We have washed . . . we are barren*: these voices from below represent the numerous class of writers whose works are perfectly harmless and perfectly useless.



PAGE 208. 12. *stop—for me*: Düntzer says this is the voice of Science, which, since its revival three centuries before, had been struggling to attain full recognition.

37. *Half-witch*: 'Halbhexe', presumably one who has not been fully initiated.

PAGE 209. 19. Here should come the stage direction, 'They alight'.

37. *young Voland*: Junker Voland; Voland was a name for the devil, but its origin is disputed; Blackie derives it from Lat. *volare*, to 'fly', but the dictionaries give Valand or Valant as the earlier form.

PAGE 211. 36. *Ex-minister*: in German 'Minister', though no doubt he was no longer in office.

PAGE 213. 31. *Lilith*: she was an Assyrian demon who flew about at night stealing children and visiting men in their dreams. The report that she was Adam's first wife may have arisen from Genesis i. 27, where a woman is said to have been created together with Adam, the detailed creation of Eve being given, ii. 20-22. Lilith was represented as a beautiful woman with long hair.

PAGE 214. 31. *Proctophantasmist*: all editors are agreed that under this name Goethe pillories a Berlin writer called Christopher Nicolai, a dull but persistent critic of the forward movement in letters in which Goethe was distinguished. Carlyle says he 'was indeed a very meritorious person, had he not committed one fundamental error: to the very last he never could persuade himself that there was anything in Heaven or Earth which had not been dreamed of in *his* philosophy' (*German Romance*, 'Goethe', foot-note to Introduction). At one time Nicolai's sight became affected so that he saw apparitions in clear daylight. His malady was relieved by the application of leeches to the base of his spine. Hence the name Goethe gives him, which combines the Greek for the posterior, and one who sees phantoms.

PAGE 215. 40. *the Tegel ghost*: Tegel, says Hayward, is some seven or eight miles from Berlin. Its ghost,



a fraudulent one, like our Cock-lane Ghost, made a great stir in 1797, and provoked much controversy until it was detected.

PAGE 216. 19. *a sour cynic on his travels*: Nicolai published an account of his travels through Germany and Switzerland in twelve volumes, 1783-95.

PAGE 217. 31. *Medusa's brow*: Medusa was the only mortal one of the three Gorgons; she had been a beautiful maiden, but for an act of impiety her hair was changed to snakes, and her gaze turned to stone all who met it. She was slain by Perseus, who cut off her head and presented it to Athene to wear on her shield.

PAGE 218. 21. *Servibilis*: Blackie translates 'A Servant'.

### WALPURGIS NIGHT'S DREAM

PAGE 219. 3. *Oberon and Titania*, the King and Queen of the Fairies, appear in *A Midsummer Night's Dream*; their *Golden Wedding* is, of course, the fiftieth anniversary of their wedding; Blackie curiously translates *goldne Hochzeit*, 'Golden Hightide'. This Intermezzo ('Interlude'), written mainly to hold up Goethe's contemporaries to ridicule, comes with no great propriety in the middle of such a play as *Faust*.

14. *discord*: for the quarrel of Oberon and Titania see *A Mids. Night's Dr.* II. i.

20. *Puck*, otherwise known as Robin Goodfellow, was a mischievous imp drawn from old Norse folklore; he appears in *A Mids. Night's Dr.* as Oberon's jester.

25. *Ariel*: an airy spirit from *The Tempest*.

PAGE 221. 1. *Inquisitive traveller*: this is Nicolai, see note to p. 214, l. 31; Jesuit-hunting was one of his favourite pursuits, see below, p. 223, ll. 4-7.

10. *The 'Gods of Greece'* were believed by the early Fathers of the Church to be demons; hence the Orthodox Divine's astonishment at finding Oberon without any diabolic attributes.

11. *Artist from the North*: possibly Goethe himself,



who visited Italy in 1786, and recorded his impressions in *Italienische Reise* (Italian Tour).

16. *Formalist*: German 'Purist'; Hayward says this word is meant for one of the people who demanded great niceness of expression and decorum of dress on the stage.

PAGE 222. 17. *Xenien*: the name of a book of epigrams by Goethe and Schiller directed against their literary contemporaries. They borrowed the name from Martial's *Xenia* ('Friendly Gifts').

22. *Hennings*: August H. Hennings (1746-1826), an author with whom Goethe had many quarrels; he brought out a journal, *Der Genius der Zeit* (The Spirit of the Age), in 1793, and, says Hayward, another called *Musaget*.

PAGE 223. 8. *Crane*: J. C. Lavater (1741-1801), the founder of the science of physiognomy, whom Goethe in a private letter compared to that long-legged bird.

28. *Fiddler*: German *Fideler*; if this is connected with the adj. *fidel*, it means 'Good Fellow', 'Merry Wag'; most editors, however, connect it with *fiedeln*, 'to fiddle'.

PAGE 224. 6. *Idealist*: in Philosophy the doctrine of Idealism teaches that we can know only our own mental states, that for us external things only have an existence in so far as we perceive them, and that possibly they have no other existence, i.e. no existence in themselves. The *Realist*, on the contrary, holds that things have an existence in themselves, independent of our perception or thought of them.

24. *Devil and doubt*: I know no proverb that connects these two words. The German has 'Only Zweifel (doubt) rimes with Teufel (devil)'.

#### NIGHT.—OPEN PLAIN

PAGE 228. 12. *near the gibbet*: um den Rabenstein, 'round the ravenstone', the name for an enclosed mound where executions took place. The mode of death was then beheading, not hanging, as 'gibbet' suggests.



## PRISON

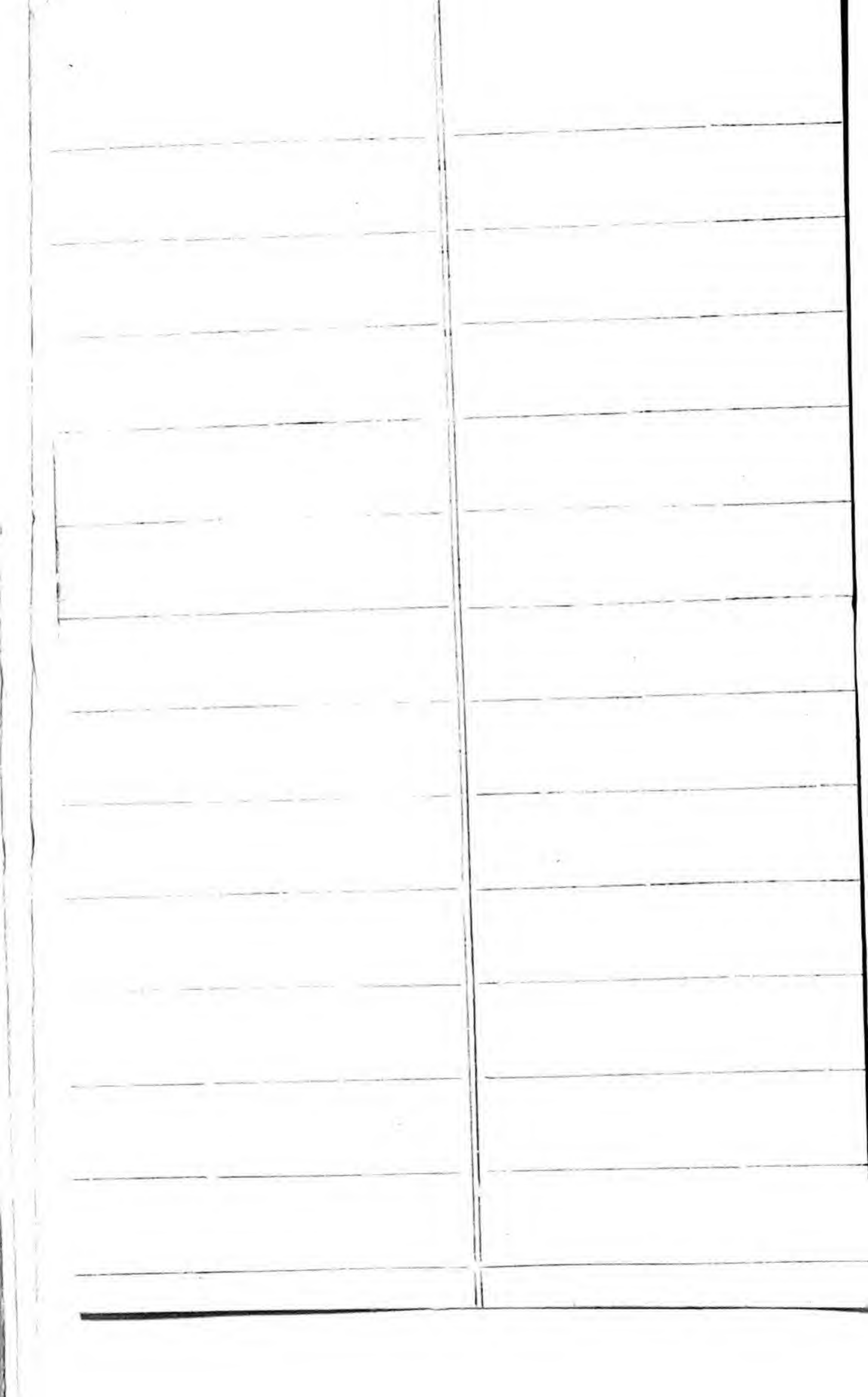
PAGE 229. 9. *My mother! my mother*: this song, says Hayward, is founded on the old folk-tale 'Van den Machandel Boom' (= Von dem Wachholder-Baum) (the Juniper tree), given by the brothers Grimm in their *Kinder- und Haus-Märchen*.

33. *Savage*: lit. 'Executioner' (Henker).

PAGE 234. 17. *the death-wand is broken*: according to an old German custom, when the judge sentenced a person to death, or (as others say) when he handed him to the executioner, he broke a white staff as a symbol that all was over.

PAGE 235. 6. *I am afraid to look at thee*: after uttering these words Margaret dies. Mephistopheles, looking at her lifeless body, pronounces her final doom, but an angel voice contradicts him. Then the voice of Margaret's spirit is heard calling to her lover as she passes upward to Heaven. Only by this interpretation can the 'Voice from within' be explained.











W. L. (B. B. 11000)

in the (B. B. 11000)  
Coll. : Found. 11000  
F. B. Austin  
of the  
& Malone's L. B.  
F. B. Austin  
W. L. & W. L. B.  
Austin  
F. B. Austin, Christy  
W. L. & W. L. B.

Lahar :



Acc. No. \_\_\_\_\_

Call No. \_\_\_\_\_

# DATE SLIP

**"This book was issued from the Library on the last stamped. A fine of 10 Paise will be charge each day the book is kept over - due".**

[illegible]



C. L. 30.

Acc no 2078

"This book was taken from the Library on  
last stamped. A fine of one anna will  
for each day the book is kept over due."

14 9/12



AN.  
GOVERNMENT  
COLLEGE LIB.  
SRINAGAR.

Members of College  
Teaching Staff can borrow  
ten books at a time and can  
retain these for one month.

A student of the college  
can borrow one book at a time,  
and can retain it for 14 days.

Books in any way  
injured or lost shall  
be paid for or  
placed by the  
er.